

The book cover is a vibrant red with a fine, pebbled texture. A decorative border, consisting of a repeating pattern of small, stylized flowers and leaves in black and white, frames the central text area. The title 'THE TREE OF ANGER' is printed in a classic, black, serif font, centered horizontally and vertically within the border.

THE TREE OF ANGER

B. R. HICKS



# THE TREE OF ANGER

B. R. HICKS



Christ Gospel Press  
P. O. Box 786  
Jeffersonville, Indiana 47131-0786  
<http://www.christgospel.org/>

Publisher: Christ Gospel Press  
P. O Box 786  
Jeffersonville, Indiana 47131-0786

© Christ Gospel Churches Int'l., Inc., 1976

Revised 1998

ISBN 1-58363-112-7

All rights reserved.

Printed in the United States of America.

## Table Of Contents

Preface

Introduction

Chapter One: The Origin of Anger

- I. God's Armory of Holy Redemptive Understanding
- II. God's Cellar or Garner of Holy Revelation Wisdom
- III. God's Treasure House of Holy Satisfaction Knowledge

Chapter Two: The Origin of Sin

Chapter Three: Dependence and Independence

Chapter Four: Man's Extrasensory Sight

Chapter Five: The Little God Syndrome

Chapter Six: the Reality Principle

Chapter Seven: Man's Fig Leaves of Anger

Chapter Eight: Visible Aboveground Anger

Chapter Nine: Invisible Underground Anger

Chapter Ten: The Deepest Form of Anger – Wrath

- I. Cain
- II. King Saul
- III. Naaman
- IV. Uzziah

Chapter Eleven: The Need for Growth

- I. Evidences of Emotional and Spiritual Growth
- II. Evidences of Emotional and Spiritual Immaturity

Chapter Twelve: How to Deal with Anger

- I. Acknowledge the Condition
- II. Seek God's Help in Prayer
- III. Pray for Understanding
- IV. Deal with Anger

Chapter Thirteen: Be Angry and Sin Not

Chapter Fourteen: The Appeasement of Justifiable Anger

- I. The Seven Basic Principles by Which God Works to Appease Justifiable Anger
- II. The Example of Moses' Justifiable Anger
- III. The Example of David's Justifiable Anger

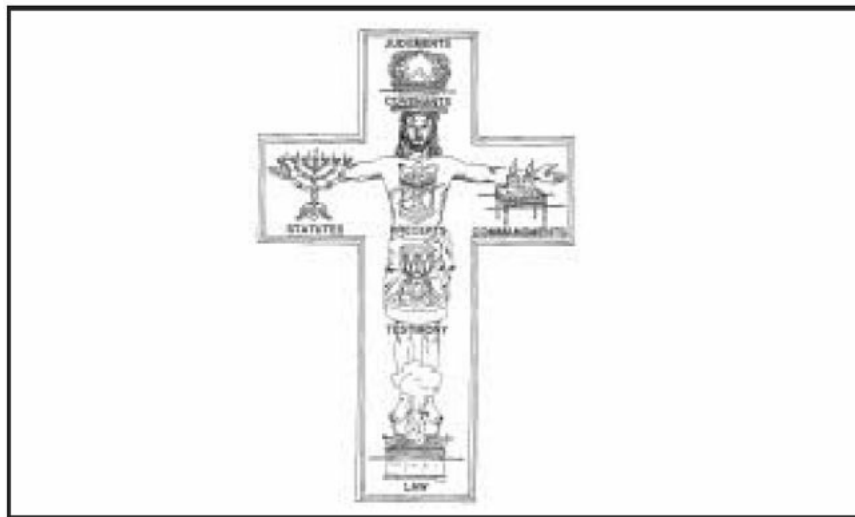
Chapter Fifteen: Converted Anger Becomes Prosperity

Summary

## Preface

God, as the Master Teacher, uses figures, types, shadows, parables, metaphors, and allegories throughout His Word in order to illustrate Divine Truth. For example, when the children of Israel in the wilderness needed a way of approach to and communication with a Holy God, He provided the Mosaic Tabernacle which was a picture, a shadow, a type of the Son of God, the LORD Jesus Christ.\*

**Which was a figure** for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience; (Hebrews 9:9).



The first Tabernacle, known as the Mosaic Tabernacle, was just a shadow of the Stature and Ministry of the second greater and more perfect Tabernacle, Jesus Christ, Who came with Brightness and Glory and caused the shadows to flee and the Truth to stand revealed as the illuminating splendour of the noonday Sun. Because the Mosaic Tabernacle was a figure, that is, an outlined shape of the Stature of Jesus Christ, God instructed Moses four times to build the Tabernacle after the pattern which was shown to him in the mount. The seven pieces of furniture in Moses' Tabernacle were laid out in the form of a Cross, with each piece representing a portion of the Stature of the Living Cross, Jesus Christ.

But **Christ** being come an high priest of good things to come, by **a greater and more perfect tabernacle**, not made with hands, that is to say, not of this building; (Hebrews 9:11).

The Body or Tabernacle which the Holy Ghost conceived as He overshadowed the blessed Virgin was a new fabric, a new order of building, infinitely superior to the earthly structure. However, since the Mosaic Tabernacle was a Divine Blueprint of the Stature of the Son of God, it becomes a guiding light to reveal to our heart how to grow up into the Measure of the Stature of the Fullness of Christ.

Till we all come in the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man, **unto the measure of the stature of the fulness of Christ**: (Ephesians 4:13).

Because the Tabernacle is a picture of the Stature of the Son of God in Whom are hid all the treasures of Wisdom and Knowledge, we may expect the Wisdom and Knowledge of all other Scripture to fit together with it. The whole Bible is a beautiful revelation of the LORD Jesus Christ. That is why God tells us that *all* Scripture is profitable.

**All scripture** is given by inspiration of God, and **is profitable** for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furnished unto all good works (II Timothy 3:16,17).

Small Statues of Truth, portrayed by the four points of the Cross, are used throughout this book not only because they picture the full Stature of Jesus Christ as revealed in the Mosaic Tabernacle but also because they depict the spiritual experiences which we will know as we grow up into spiritual maturity in Jesus Christ.

\* \* \* \* \*

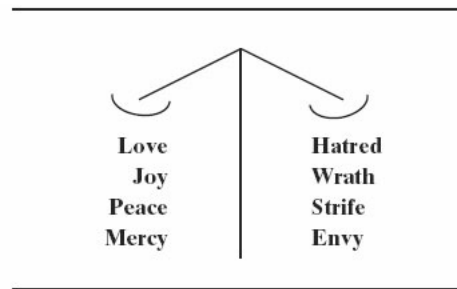
---

\* B. R. Hicks, *Precious Gem In The Tabernacle* (Jeffersonville, Indiana: Christ Gospel Churches Int'l, Inc., 1968).

## Introduction

God can be seen in all His creation, from the tiny grains of sand to the tall mountains, from the tender blades of grass to the giant trees of the forests, from the fish that swim in the depths of the sea to the birds that fly in the Heavens, from the creeping creatures to the largest land animals. Yet, none of these things reflect God so perfectly as does mankind who was created in God's own Image and Likeness.

Man, like God, is a triune being. He was created with a body, a soul, and a spirit that dwelled together in perfect harmony and oneness of relationship. However, when man sinned against God by establishing his independence from God, he found himself out of balance and unable to handle his basic human emotions, one of which is anger. In the beginning, when God created man, He balanced man's emotions of love, joy, peace, and mercy with the contrasting emotions of hatred, wrath, strife, and envy. The word *balance* means the equality of opposing forces, the equality of two things in weight, force, quality, or perfect equilibrium.



Unbalanced anger gives birth to an enormous range of problems. No human being can perfectly handle the difficulties of anger. The misuse of this basic human emotion brings untold damage to man's body, soul, and spirit and strains his relationships with others. While many mysteries concerning man's anger are still to be unraveled, both medical and scientific fields of research are becoming increasingly aware of the vital part anger plays in the general well-being of man. A high percentage of man's physical illnesses are psychosomatic and have their origin in man's anger syndrome. The violence, riots, rebellions, and hostilities in our world today are results of fallen man's misused energy, called anger.

Since no wise person wishes to see his life's energies wasted or poured out in a form that can bring nothing but destruction and ruin to himself and to those he loves, it behooves us to seek greater understanding of the cause and effect of anger. The intention of this book is to show people how to convert the violent, destructive energy called anger into a righteous, constructive form of energy. By taking our sad, depressive feelings and converting them into feelings of joy and excitement over simply being alive, we can change our life. With this change comes improved spiritual, mental, and physical health for us, personally, and more pleasant relationships with mankind. When our misused, angry energy is transformed and brought back into proper balance with God's Will, we enter into a fuller, richer life that abounds with success and happiness.

There is no better place to go for understanding on any subject than God's own Word, for in it can be found all the Eternal Moral Principles which govern the Workings of God and man. The Book of Genesis shines the Light of Wisdom on many topics; for instance, it records the beginning of creation, the beginning of man, the beginning of sin, the beginning of blood sacrifice, and the beginning of psychology and other sciences. Since our study is concerned primarily with man's anger as it works in his spirit and soul, both in the conscious and subconscious parts of his mind, we will confine our thoughts to the Truths which relate to these areas. We frequently will refer to the events and happenings in the Garden of Eden because this story gives the beginning rays of Light about the origin and purpose of the energy now called anger. The story of Adam-male and Adam-female shows the point of conception of the corrupted Tree of Anger in man's heart. As we receive the Light of Wisdom from God's Word and

our eyes of understanding are opened to perceive the origin of our problem, we will know ourself in a fuller way and learn how to cope more effectively with the anger syndrome which we have inherited from Adam the First.

— The Author



**THE TREE OF GOD'S WILL**

# Chapter One

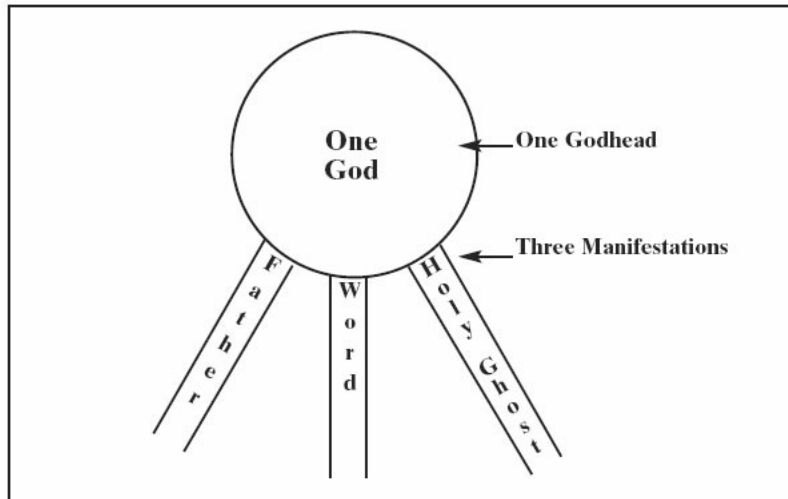
## The Origin Of Anger

When medical students start their studies, they are taught first about the workings of a normal, healthy body. Only by gaining a clear understanding of true health are they able to perceive the degree and seriousness of any malfunction, caused by disease, that afflicts the body.

This Principle also applies to the spiritual realm. Before we truly can understand the corruption of the anger we now possess, it is necessary to know how this energy worked before sin came into the picture. This, in turn, makes it necessary to find the source of all anger. To trace a thing back to its source is to confront God. This is inevitable since God is the Originator and Creator of all things, both visible and invisible.

In the beginning, man was created in the Likeness and Image of God. However, he retained this beautiful state of unity and balance just a short time. Everything in him soon became corrupted and changed by sin. Unregenerated man now possesses only corrupted forms of his once wealthy inheritance. Yet, the very fact that the shaft of man's corrupted will includes anger indicates that the pure form of anger still is found on the Shaft of God's Will.

Let us review some Truths which give the basis for understanding how God's Will is the origin of anger. The first Key of Knowledge here is the doctrine of God's Unity and His Separation. Since the Principle of the Oneness of the Godhead and His Triune manifestations to man is covered in detail in the book *Drops Of Doctrine*,\* only one Scripture will be mentioned to support each side of this point of Truth. God is One (Acts 17:22-29). This One God is able to separate Himself and flow out in three streams of revelation (I John 5:7). God reveals Himself to man as Father, Word, and Holy Ghost.



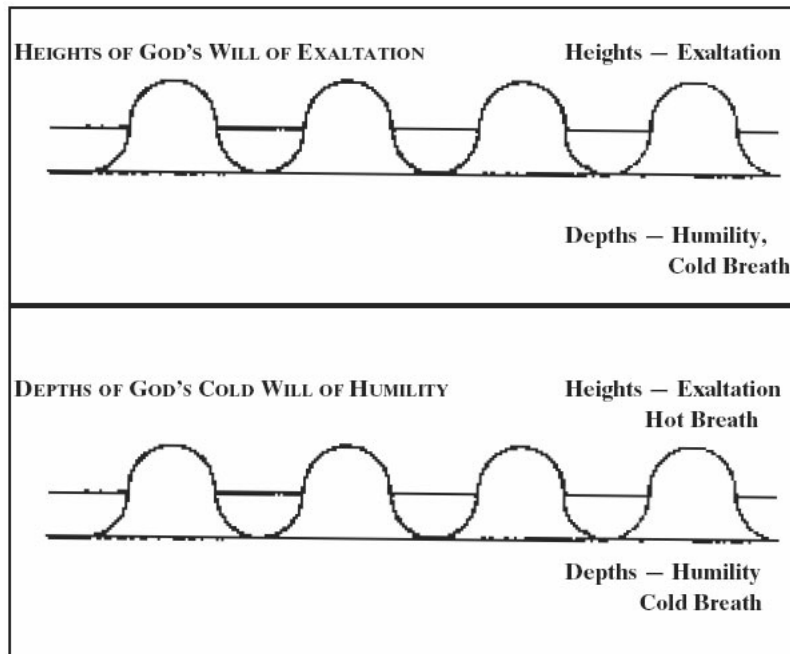
Although God can separate Himself on one hand, there is a sense in which He never separates Himself because He is Omnipresent. Wherever we find the Father, we also find the Omnipresence of the Word and the Spirit. Wherever we find God's Word being revealed, we can be sure that the Father and the Spirit are there also. Wherever the Spirit is revealed, the Father and the Word are there in their Omnipresence.

The second key of knowledge involves the Exaltation and Humility Principle of God. This Principle is expressed in the eighteenth Psalm as the Hot and Cold Sides of God's Breath.

At the brightness that was before him his thick clouds passed, hail stones and coals of fire. The LORD also thundered in the heavens, and **the Highest gave his voice** [His Word or His Will]; **hail stones and coals of fire** (Psalm 18:12,13).

God's Word or Breath comes out of His Mouth in two streams. The hot stream, which is the spawning place of coals of fire, relates primarily to the heights of God's Exaltation. The cold stream, which generates hailstones, pertains primarily to the depths of His Humility. God is Omnipresent; therefore, within the heights of His Exaltation,

we also find the depths of His Cold Humility Breath; and within the depths of God's Humility, we also find the heights of His Hot Breath of Exaltation.



While Exaltation basically is hot, it has a cold side as well; and while Humility basically is cold, it possesses a hot side as well.

One of the first of God's Laws to learn is the Law of Opposites. This is true in the spiritual realm, and it is true in the natural realm. Through the union of opposites, many things are created, formed, begotten, and put into motion. In the spiritual realm, there is hot and cold, day and night, heights and depths, pleasure and pain, male and female, evening and morning, light and darkness, for example. Likewise, through the opposites of God's Will, He has begotten, created, and formed all things.

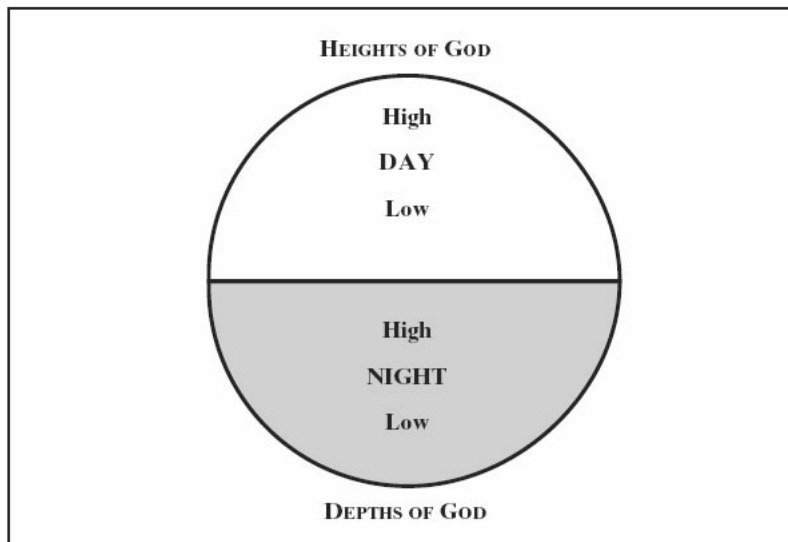
God has many ways, for example, of expressing the Law of Opposites through the Exaltation and Humility Principle. He sometimes uses the terms *day and night*.

And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented **day and night** for ever and ever (Revelation 20:10).

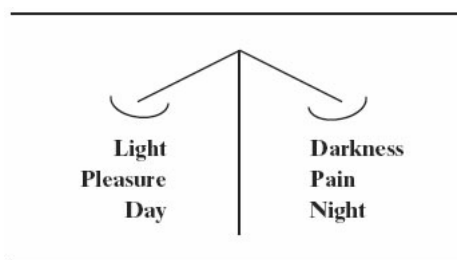
And one of the elders answered, saying unto me, What are these which are arrayed in white robes? and whence come they? And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which come out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb. Therefore are they before the throne of God, and serve him **day and night** in his temple: and he that sitteth on the throne shall dwell among them (Revelation 7:13-15).

The *day* speaks of the heights of God's Exaltation; it speaks of the light, the good, the pleasure side of God's Will. The *night* speaks of the depths of His Humility Will, which include darkness, suffering, misery, woe, afflictions, or the pain side of God's Will. The heights of God's Day Will or Pleasure Will has a low place, and the depths of God's Night Will or Pain Will also has a high place and a low place.

(See diagram on following page.)



God also uses the form of scales to illustrate the division of His Will and the perfect balance of it.



God has perfectly balanced light and darkness, pleasure and pain, day and night, and all other opposites.

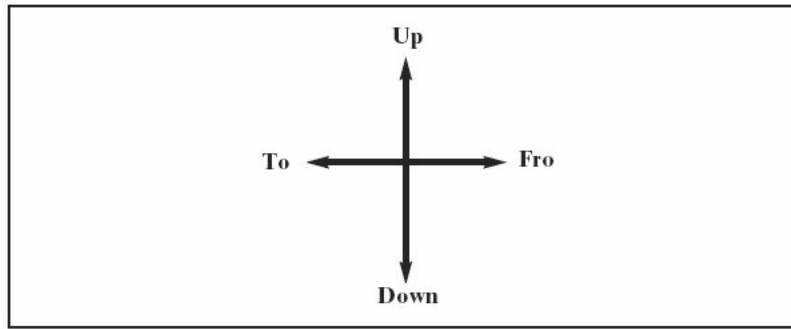
These golden Keys of Knowledge unlock many mysteries in God's Word. One mystery these Keys help us understand is where anger fits in God's Will. God unfolds the Divine Nature of His Will in the following order: Redemptive Understanding, Revelation Wisdom, and Satisfaction Knowledge. Although God's Will is One, He separates it in this order so that man can understand it better. In its separated form, God's Will has an exalted side and a humility side; or in other words, He has a Day Will and a Night Will.

God's Exalted Day Will is for the purpose of filling the human heart and will with glorious joy and rapture so that the soul may be lifted up on high and be elevated to such dignity and power that a person will be able to know and experience the pleasure of the Truth of God in its highest realms. God's Humility Night Will is for the purpose of filling the human heart and will with lowliness and meekness and such a patient disposition that the soul is able to endure all the pains and sufferings through any low condition, position, or rank in order to descend to the low place before God and, thereby, discover and experience the gratitude pleasure of the Truth of God in the lowest realms.

God's Day Will or His Will for the Light has the threefold nature of Redemptive Understanding, Revelation Wisdom, and Satisfaction Knowledge. Likewise, God's Night Will or His Will for the Darkness has the threefold nature of Redemptive Understanding, Revelation Wisdom, and Satisfaction Knowledge.

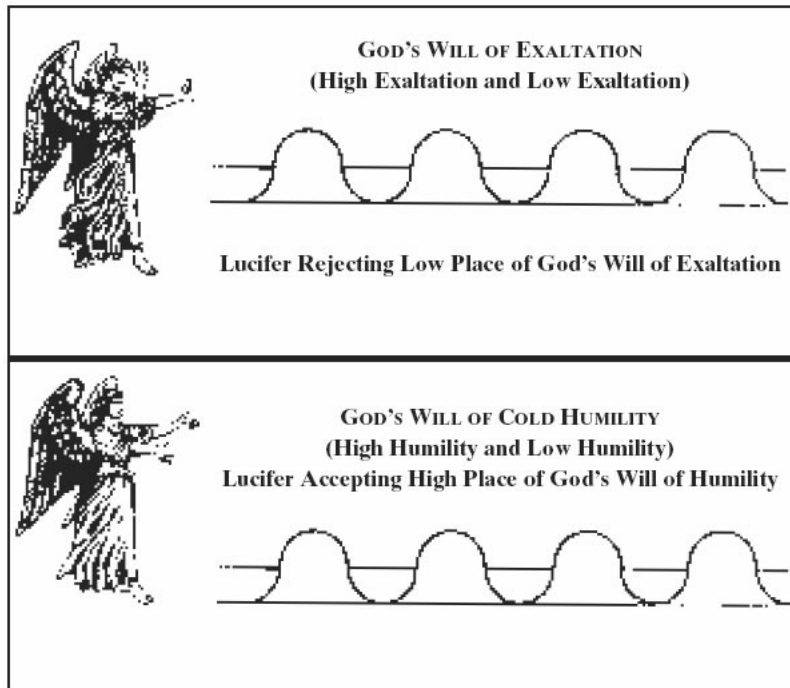
In Eternity-Past, before iniquity was found in his heart, Lucifer, the beautiful Angel of Light, the glorious Son of the Morning, was acquainted with these two Wills of God. Lucifer walked, by gift, up and down in the midst of the Stones of Fire in God's Exalted Will (Ezekiel 28:14). He also knew something of God's Humility Will because, even after he had been cast out of Heaven for his rebellion against God, he continued going to and fro and up and down in the Earth, searching for those who were walking in God's two Wills (Job 1:7).

(See diagram on following page.)



Lucifer knew God's Will of Exaltation by gift because he was born in the morning on the exalted side. If he had been willing to walk in the part of the Exalted Will that was revealed to him and to eat of the fruits which God had put on that portion of His Will, he would have known exaltation by stature and growth, just as God originally intended for him to know it; and he would have been prepared properly to walk in God's Humility Will. But, Lucifer opened his heart to iniquity and pride. Instead of desiring to fulfill God's Will, his heart's desire was to ascend and gain more exaltation for himself. This proud thought led him to refuse the Humility Cold Breath, the low place, that belonged to the Exalted Will. Then, with his eyes on the exaltation which belonged to God's Humility Will, he soon walked over to that Will and stole as much as he could from God.

(See drawing on following page.)



Lucifer corrupted everything he had stolen from God's Will of Exaltation and His Will of Humility. Then, he perverted or changed the beginning of the order of God's Will for man. God intended that, first, man should have Redemptive Understanding and, second, Revelation Wisdom and, third, Satisfaction Knowledge. However, Lucifer substituted Redemptive Understanding for Revelation Wisdom. He offered Adam-female his Pride of Revelation, first, then his Pride of Redemption, and, finally, his Pride of Satisfaction.

The portion of the shaft of Lucifer's will that is called Pride of Revelation brought forth the fruits of idolatry, witchcraft, variance, emulations, seditions, and heresies. His Pride of Redemption brought forth hatred, wrath, strife, envy, and murder. His Pride of Satisfaction produced adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, drunkenness, and revellings.

LUCIFER'S WILL OF PRIDE		
Pride of Revelation	Pride of Redemption	Pride of Satisfaction
Idolatry	Hatred	Adultery
Witchcraft	Wrath	Fornication
Variance	Strife	Uncleanness
Emulations	Envy	Lasciviousness
Seditions	Murder	Drunkenness
Heresies		Revellings

It was this changed, corrupted will that Lucifer, in his Serpent form, presented as his own. And, it was this corrupted will with its corrupted anger that our first parents chose to receive into the innermost part of their human wills.

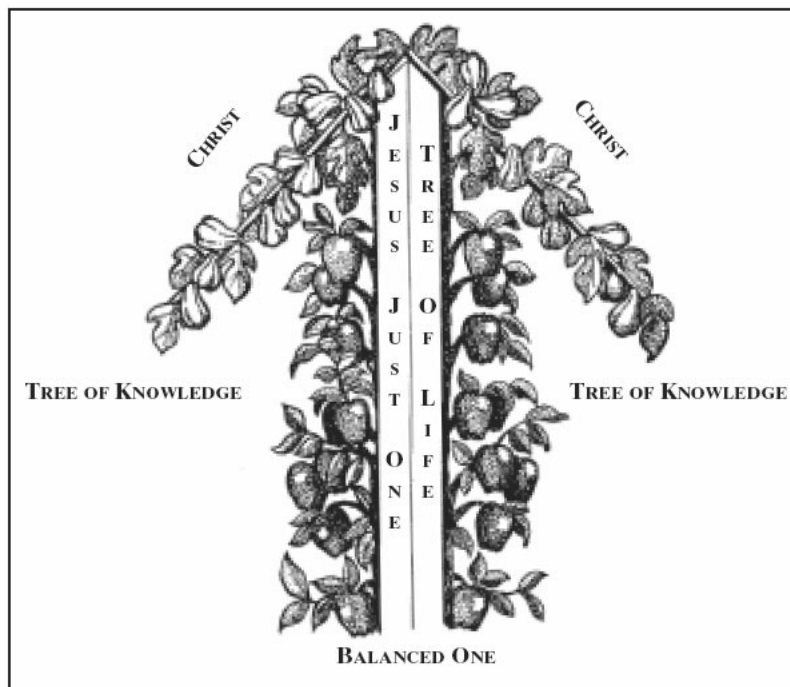
This little trip back into Eternity-Past will help us better understand the happenings in the Garden of Eden. God offered Adam-male and Adam-female a chance to get their wills joined to His Exalted Day Will and His Humility Night Will in their proper order and in their uncorrupted form.

And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. **And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight** [for the satisfaction of man's soul], **and good for food** [for the satisfaction of

man's body); **the tree of life** [for the satisfaction of man's spirit] **also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil....** And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, **Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die** (Genesis 2:8,9;15-17).

God provided for the total satisfaction of man's body, soul, and spirit in the various Trees of the Garden. In the midst of the Garden, He planted two special Trees: the Tree of Life and the Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil. (The Tree of Knowledge was not originally a Tree of Death. The Tree brought Death to Adammale and Adam-female because they partook of it prematurely, outside of God's Perfect Will. Therefore, it was their *disobedience* to God's Will that brought Death.)

In spite of the fact that these Trees were mentioned separately, they dwelled together as one Unity because they were the two Wills of God in "Tree Form." The Tree of Life was Jesus, the Just One, the Balanced One, in Spirit and Soul Form, before He took on a physical Body. He dwelled or grew invisibly within the visible Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, which was the Word, the Christ.



Christ, the Eternal Word of God, existed before Jesus was begotten of God in Spirit and Soul Form (I Corinthians 10:1-4; I Peter 1:10,11). The Apostle Paul declared that the Rock which Israel drank of was *Christ*. Moses declared that the Rock was the Word, a God of Truth (Deuteronomy 32:4). Thus, Christ is the Rock, the Eternal Word of God. Not until after Jesus had taken on a physical Body, died, was buried, and, finally, resurrected from the dead did He know the Eternal joining with the Christ (Acts 2:36). Jesus and Christ are now One, but for the sake of clarity, we shall continue to speak of them separately in this study.

Jesus is called the Day Star (II Peter 1:19). He also is called the Bright and Morning Star (Revelation 22:16). It is evident from these titles that Jesus possessed the Day or Exalted Side of God's Will. Jesus' condescending Humility is seen in His willingness to come down into this old world and subject Himself to all the limitations of a mortal Body, not to mention the unspeakable suffering He went through as He went down into Death, Hell, and the Pit so that fallen man might be redeemed from his sin and restored to the fellowship he once knew with God. Thus, it is evident that Jesus also possessed the Night or Humility Side of God's Will.

Jesus possessed the Day, the Light, the Pleasure Side of His Father's Redemptive Understanding, with its Fruits of Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy. Many times He manifested the Day Will with its Fruits of Love and Mercy to those who came for healing, both spiritually and physically. Jesus also possessed the Night, the Darkness, the Pain Side of His Father's Redemptive Will, with its Fruits of Holy Hatred, Holy Mourning and Grief, Holy Anger, Godly Jealousy, Death, Strife, Womb, and Covering. The Fruits of Jesus' Night Will were manifested when He made a

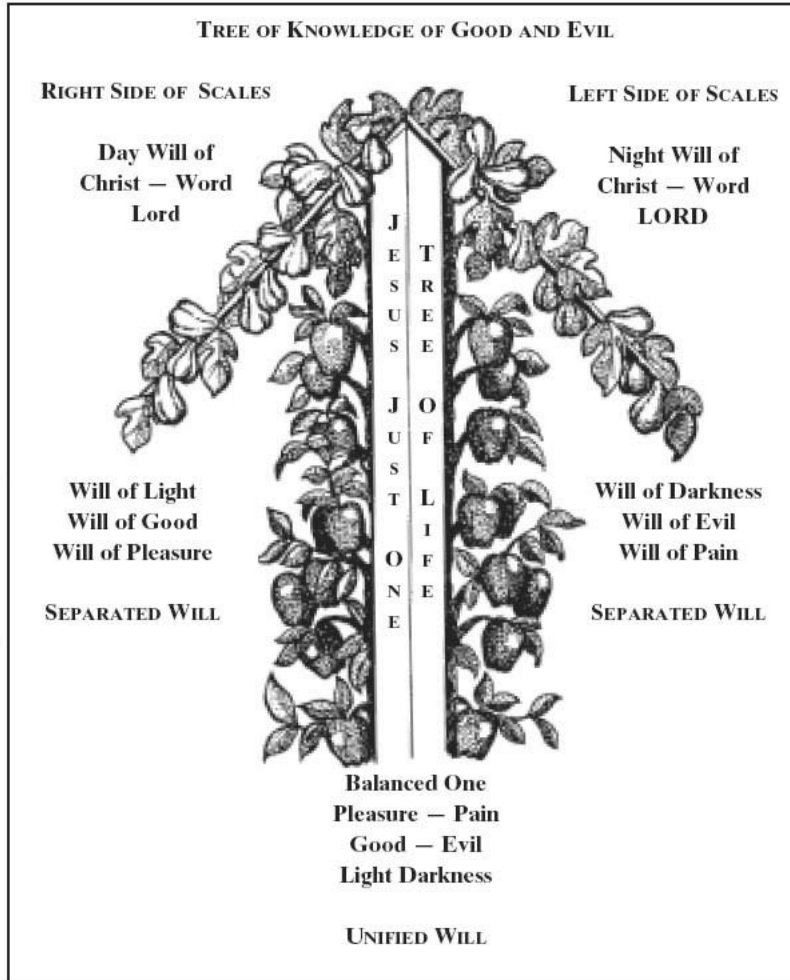
scourge of cords and drove out the ungodly ones who had made His Father's House a den of thieves. These two paradoxical sides of God's Will existed in a Unified Form in God's Son, Jesus.

God's perfect order for Adam-male and Adam-female was for them to partake *first* of His Unified Will of Day and Night in Jesus, the Tree of Life. It was His Will for them to know the union of Holy Love and Holy Hatred and Holy Peace and Holy Anger. For example, how could Love really be complete without Holy Hatred to protect Love and keep it only for God? How could true Peace exist without the union of Holy Anger to protect its still Waters? God had told Adam-male and Adam-female to dress and keep the Garden. In other words, they were to watch the Garden. But, when they failed to obey God and eat of the Unified Will of Day and Night in Jesus, the Tree of Life, they had no Holy Love and Hate and no Holy Peace and Anger with which to resist the Serpent when he came to them.

If Adam-male and Adam-female had obeyed God and eaten of the Fruit of the Tree of Life, they would have gained the substance needed to make them grow and mature spiritually; thus, they would have been able to resist the Serpent. Had they been clothed from the Day and Night Sides of the Tree, they would have warred effectively against the Serpent's deceitful, proud words. Then, in time, God would have led them to eat of the Divided Sides of His Will in Christ, the Tree of Knowledge of Good (Pleasure) and Evil (Pain).

How wise God was to provide them with the Unity of Pleasure and Pain in the Tree of Life. Thus, they would not have been tempted to be lifted up in Pleasure, for they would have had the balance of Pain, and neither would they have been tempted to despondency with Pain, for they would have had the balance of Pleasure. God's Plan was to let them experience, first, the unified Pleasure and Pain in Jesus, the Tree of Life, and, then, to lead them to Christ the Word, the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, and let them experience Pleasure and Pain separately, for they would have been prepared for the separating experience. In God's order, they would have had the Life and the Stature in Jesus that would have permitted them to partake of the Good and the Evil — the Pleasure and the Pain — in Christ the Word, the Tree of Knowledge. Thus, it would not have brought Death to them.

We have said that the Exalted Day Will and the Humility Night Will were unified in Jesus, the Tree of Life, and that the Exalted Day Will and the Humility Night Will were separated in Christ, the Tree of Knowledge. With this thought in mind, let us look again at the diagram of the two Trees.

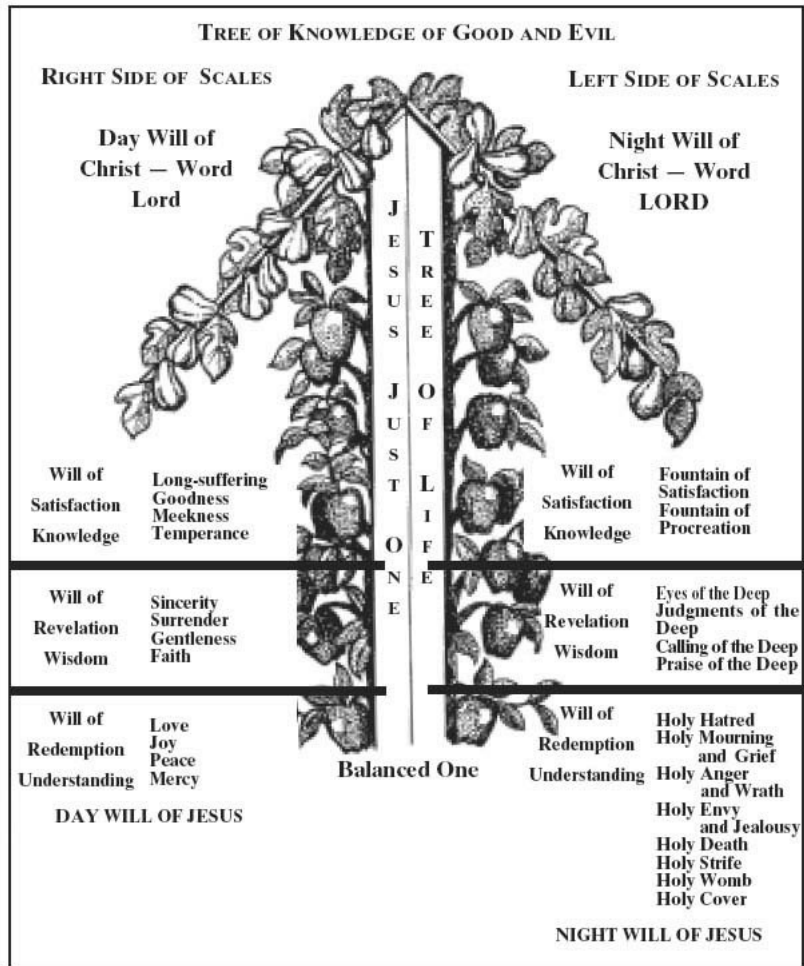


Notice that the drawing resembles a pair of scales or balances, with Jesus, the Tree of Life, forming the center post of the scales and with Christ, the Tree of Knowledge, being divided between Good and Evil. We are, in fact, looking at the only true set of balances. Only to Jesus, the Just One, has God committed the Unified Redemptive Understanding, the Unified Revelation Wisdom, and the Unified Satisfaction Knowledge needed to balance, perfectly, all separated Pleasure and separated Pain.

It is easy to see the Day and Night Sides of the Will of Christ because the Tree of Knowledge is divided visibly, with the scales' *right* side weighing out the Pleasure of the Word's Day Will and with the scales' *left* side weighing out the Pain of His Night Will.

Since Jesus, the Tree of Life, grew invisibly within the Tree of Knowledge, the separation between the Day and Night Sides of His Will is less apparent; nevertheless, the distinction is there. In the Spirit, I have seen Jesus' Will separated on each side of the center post, then, reaching out like two great pillars to support the Reality Principle of Pleasure and Pain as it is weighed out in God's Scales. Holy Anger belongs to the Night Side of Jesus' Will; therefore, we shall take Jesus' Will apart and stand the pillars up so that we can examine them in detail.

(See drawing on following page.)



As we view the Day Will of Jesus from the bottom to the top, we see Jesus' *Redemptive Understanding* (which produces the Fruits of Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy), His *Revelation Wisdom* (which produces the Fruits of Sincerity, Surrender, Gentleness, and Faith), and His *Satisfaction Knowledge* (which produces the Fruits of Long-suffering, Goodness, Meekness or Humility, and Temperance).

As beautiful and desirable as this Day Will is, it still is incomplete in itself because the other half of Jesus' Redemptive Understanding, Revelation Wisdom, and Satisfaction Knowledge is over on the Night Side of His Will. No new forms can be produced with halves. For example, a man is half of a couple, and a woman is half of a couple, but no new life is begotten as long as the halves remain single. Only when the two halves get married and come together in a oneness of marriage relationship do they become fruitful in a new way. So it is with the two Wills of Jesus. Separated, each is just half of a Wheel. The two halves must come together to form the whole Wheel which can beget a child, as it were, that is a union of both halves of the Wheel.

The male Redemptive Understanding of Pleasure must be joined with the female Redemptive Understanding of Pain or Suffering in order for our understanding to be complete and fruitful. When both classes of Understanding come together in us, they beget a determination to go on for Jesus Christ and to be like Him in the face of all Satanic and fleshly opposition. We can be perfectly balanced regardless of whether we are on the Pleasure Side or the Pain Side of the scales. In like manner, the male Revelation Wisdom on the Pleasure Side must be joined with the female Revelation Wisdom on the Pain Side, and the male Satisfaction Knowledge on the Pleasure Side must be made one with the female Satisfaction Knowledge on the Pain Side if these two portions of Jesus' Will are to be complete and balanced in us.

If we always had Light on the Pleasure Side and never had Darkness or Pain, we would become spiritual eunuchs, incapable of bringing forth new creation. God's Divine Order is for Light and Darkness to be joined

together. In the creation, “Darkness was upon the face of the Deep”; then, God said, “Let there be Light.” In other words, “Let Darkness be joined to the Light.” God started this present creation on the Darkness Side of His Redemptive Will; then, He crowned it with the Light Side. Together, the evening and the morning — the Darkness and the Light — were the first day.

On the sixth day of creation, God created man, placed him in the beautiful Garden of Eden and set before him a pathway that, if followed, would have led man directly to God’s Unified Will of Exaltation and Humility in Jesus, the Tree of Life.

God wanted man (Adam-male and Adam-female) to feed on this Tree until the middle of their wills was filled with the part of Jesus’ Redemptive Understanding which produces Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy; the part of His Revelation Wisdom which produces Sincerity, Surrender, Gentleness, and Faith; and the part of His Satisfaction Knowledge which produces Long-suffering, Goodness, Meekness or Humility, and Temperance. Then, God wanted all that Light encircled with a covering of Humility from the Night Side of Jesus’ Will.

On the Dark Side of the Tree of Life, they would have found Holy Hatred — hatred that would have been directed against anything that tried to come between them and God. They would have found Holy Anger — anger that would have worked against sin. Just imagine the class of warfare Adam-male and Adam-female could have waged against the Serpent if they had chosen God’s Divine Will and Order for their lives. Unfortunately for them (and for us), they made the wrong choice. Every man is born with his human will joined to the wrong kind of love and hatred and anger.

Many Scriptures deal with the Dark Side of Jesus’ Will, but, without going into an in-depth study of this subject, we can gain some understanding of what belongs to Jesus’ Redemptive Understanding, Revelation Wisdom, and Satisfaction Knowledge on the Night Side of His Will by taking just a few Scriptures to establish this point.

Jesus’ Redemptive Understanding is the impartation of His Divine Eyesight into our heart and mind, which opens the eye of our intelligence, enabling us to deduce, from the things we already have learned, a matter in its true form.

Jesus’ Revelation Wisdom imparts beautiful secrets and mysteries of His Word to us that we never have known before and helps us to learn His Truth and make it our very own.

Jesus’ Satisfaction Knowledge anoints our heart and mind with Holy Inspiration, uniting Understanding and Wisdom in our mind so that we perceive whole new realms of His Glory and Truth.

It is important to remember that God’s Cold Humility Will relates to His Dark, Hidden Depths, for Scripture frequently uses the term *depth* when referring to the Night Side of God’s Will. The Book of Psalms tells something about God’s Deep, Dark, Cold Will.

By the word of the LORD were the heavens made; and all the host of them by the breath of his mouth. He gathereth the waters of the sea together as an heap: **he layeth up the depth in storehouses** (Psalm 33:6,7).

This verse cannot be talking about a literal sea because the Hebrew word for *storehouse* means a depository, an armory, a cellar, a garner, a storehouse, a treasure house.

One side of God’s Will is like a spiritual sea; it is a deep place. His Redemptive Understanding is like an Armory in that He stores His Weapons of warfare there. If we are going to redeem anything, it must be done either with the Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy from the Light Side of Redemptive Understanding or with the weapons that belong to the Dark Side of Redemptive Understanding — His Holy Hatred, Holy Anger, and Godly Jealousy, for example.

God’s Revelation Wisdom is like a Garner in which He stores Food. His Revelation Will is for giving us Food out of the Word of God.

God’s Satisfaction Knowledge is where He hides His Fountain of Satisfaction and His Procreative Fountain. He keeps all kinds of valuable Seeds stored in His Treasure House.

(See diagram on following page.)

GOD'S DEEP, COLD HUMILITY WILL		
Armory of Holy Redemptive Understanding	Cellar-Garner of Holy Revelation Wisdom	Treasure House of Holy Satisfaction Knowledge
Hatred Mourning and Grief Anger Envy and Jealousy Death Strife Womb Covering	Eyes of the Deep Judgments of the Deep Calling of the Deep Praise of the Deep	Fountain of Satisfaction Fountain of Procreation

It is one thing to know about this Deep Will; it is another thing to get it open. However, God is faithful to give us the Key that unlocks the Depths of His Cold Will.

The LORD by wisdom hath founded the earth; by understanding hath he established the heavens. **By his knowledge the depths are broken up**, and the clouds drop down the dew (Proverbs 3:19,20).

God gave His Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy to Adam-male and Adam-female. If they had protected what God had given them by putting on the cloak of humility, they would have come to the Tree of Life and, eventually, would have come to the Knowledge at the top of that Tree. The exalted Knowledge from the Tree of Life, in turn, would have opened up the Separated Will of the Christ, the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.

God cannot trust us with the Knowledge of Separation of the Exalted and Humility Will of Christ until we have taken on the Exaltation and Humility Will of Jesus, from His Feet up to His Head. It takes Exalted, Fiery Glory-Knowledge to open up or melt the icy Cold Waters of Humility, causing them to flow in cool, gentle streams of Redemptive Revelation and Satisfaction. It takes Exalted Knowledge to open up the Depths of Jesus' Humility Will and the Depths of Christ's Humility Will.

Let us turn to the Book of Amos for further confirmation that the Depths of God's Cold Humility Will are opened by the Knowledge of His Fiery Exalted Will.

Thus hath the Lord GOD shewed unto me: and, behold, **the Lord GOD called to contend by fire, and it [the fire] devoured the great deep, and did eat up a part** (Amos 7:4).

If we come to Jesus and obtain more of His Redemptive Understanding of Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy and protect it with His Humility, and if we take on more of His Revelation Wisdom of Sincerity, Surrender, Gentleness, and Faith and protect it with His Humility, it brings us up to His Fiery Satisfaction Knowledge which bears the Fruits of Long-suffering, Goodness, Meekness or Humility, and Temperance. Then, when we go to the Word of God with this Knowledge in our hands, we have a Fiery Key that will devour, melt, and eat up a part of Christ's Cold, Frozen Humility Will and show it to us. It is no wonder that Jesus said, "...He that entereth not by the door [Jesus] into the sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber" (John 10:1).

Fallen Lucifer climbed up another way, and he persuaded Adam-male and Adam-female to climb up another way. There is no way for us to get involved legitimately with God's Cold Night Will in Christ or with Jesus' Cold Night Will unless we come through the Exalted Side of Jesus' Will, for only here do we find the Fiery Knowledge that is able to melt the Depths of God's Cold Word without killing us.

Jesus had Fiery Exalted Knowledge in mind when He spoke to the lawyers in His day.

Woe unto you, lawyers! **for ye have taken away the key of knowledge:** ye entered not in yourselves, and them that were entering in ye hindered (Luke 11:52).

Jesus was not speaking of secular lawyers, but to men who were expert in Old Testament Scriptures, particularly

the Mosaic Law. They had access to Knowledge that would have caused them to accept Jesus as the promised Messiah if they had accepted it. Instead of walking in the Light that was set before them, they refused to go in. Then, instead of going on their backslidden way, they hung around the doorway, hindering everyone else who came to the door.

These lawyers sound very much like many people in the religious world today. They already have turned their backs on the Truth and the Knowledge of growing up in the Stature of Jesus and being in His Bride, yet they stand around trying to persecute and hinder those who do want to go on for God. Those of us who really want to be in the Bride must learn to press on past the backslidden ones hanging around the fringes of the message and take hold of the Tree of Life for ourselves. Then, we must keep eating and growing until we personally grasp the Fiery Key of Knowledge which will open up God's Cold Night Will. The Bride is going to let the Exalted Will and the Humility Will come together within her heart so that she, just as her beloved Bridegroom, will know perfect balance.

Not everyone can find God's Cold Humility Will because it is enclosed in Darkness. This is God's way of hiding His Cold Humility Will from those who are wise and prudent in their own eyes, while He reveals it to babes.

And the earth was without form, and void; and **darkness was upon the face of the deep....** (Genesis 1:2).

Thus, in order to penetrate to God's Deep Will, we must pass through a Cloud of Darkness. The Hebrew word for *darkness* means misery, destruction, death, ignorance, sorrow, darkness, night, obscurity. The Darkness around God's Humility Will goes beyond the realm of physical darkness; therefore, in order for this spiritual Darkness to be illuminated in our mind, we must come through the Fire on the Exaltation Will of Jesus, for it takes Fiery Knowledge from Him to light the Darkness that surrounds God's Cold Will of Humility.

Jesus' Cold Will begins with God's Armory of Redemptive Understanding. The second layer consists of the Cellar or Garner of His Revelation Wisdom, while the third layer encompasses His Treasure House of Satisfaction Knowledge.

## **I. God's Armory of Holy Redemptive Understanding**

Sin darkened man's eyes and left him with a distorted vision of God, opening the door for extremes in man's thinking. When the door of man's mind is opened to see only God's Love Side, he may picture God as a cherub-faced, mealy-mouthed Being Who does nothing but drip with sticky Sweetness and Love. If, on the other hand, man's door affords him a view of the other side of God, he may see God as a stone-faced, totally merciless Being Who spends His time casting people into the flaming fires of Hell. Even Christians who know enough about God's Word to recognize the error in these extremes sometimes have trouble finding the true balance which lets them correlate Love and Hate and Pleasure and Pain with God's Will. But, reconciling a God of Love with a Warrior God Who has an Armory for storing His Weapons of Warfare becomes easier as we examine the nature of these Weapons and as we see how God uses them.

Whenever possible Jesus redeems people and situations with the Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy of His Redemptive Understanding on the Light Side of His Will. Sometimes, however, people refuse to be redeemed on the Exalted Side of God's Will. When this happens, Jesus is left with no other recourse than to use one or all of the Weapons in the Armory on the Cold, Dark Side of His Redemptive Understanding.

In His Armory, God has eight Weapons, the first of which is Holy Hatred.

### **A. Holy Hatred**

Upon entering God's Armory of Redemptive Understanding, we see His Holy Hatred against sin.

**These six things doth the LORD hate:** yea, seven are an abomination unto him: A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, An heart that deviseth wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief, A false witness that speaketh lies, and he that soweth discord among brethren (Proverbs 6:16-19).

God's Perfect Will is to redeem man with His warm Redemptive Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy that come through His Son, Jesus (John 3:16). Therefore, we can be sure that before God ever uses the Weapon of Holy Hatred against an individual, a church, a city, or a nation, He first pours out great quantities of Redemptive Understanding in the form of Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy from His Hot Exalted Will.

When people lose consciousness of God's warm Love and start feeling the cold, icy rays of His Holy Hatred coming to them, they frequently throw up their spiritual hands and say, "There is no use. God hates me. I can feel it. I might as well backslide; He is going to put me in Hell anyway."

This is ridiculous reasoning. The first thing to do is to remember that God's Holy Hatred always is directed against sin. So, if a person is feeling unloved or hated by God, it is because he has sinned and failed to repent for that sin somewhere along the way. This is not the time to stop seeking God. It is, in fact, the time to start seeking Him with renewed vigour and sincerity, saying, "Oh, Jesus, I want to be real. Please show me where I have sinned. Please open my eyes to see my offense against You so that I can repent and get that sin covered with Your precious Blood." The person who honestly prays in this manner soon will see exactly where he needs to repent. Then, as quickly as the sin is under the Blood, he again will feel the warmth of God's Love shining down on him.

Distinguishing between God's Holy Hatred and Lucifer's corrupted hatred is important to us. God's Holy Hatred, as we have said, is directed against sin because His Holy Hatred is interested in promoting the Truth of God's Will. The nature of God's Holy Hatred is merciful and forgiving, as soon as the offender repents of his sins.

Lucifer's corrupt hatred is just the opposite. When he stole some of the Hatred from God's Cold Will, he corrupted it into hatred against the Truth. Lucifer used his corrupted hatred to push down the Truth that was in his own will and, finally, to murder it so that he might exalt his own will. Then, he went on to use his corrupted hatred to war against the Truth in Adam-male and Adam-female.

Our first parents accepted Lucifer's will as the central governing shaft of their beings; therefore, we all are born with a will that hates Truth in whatever form it may appear.

Until we learn to discern between the nature of God's Holy Hatred and the nature of Lucifer's corrupt hatred (which is the same kind of hatred we have inherited from Adam the First), we can be deceived into thinking that our hatred is Holy.

The self-righteous religious crowd always has been especially guilty in this area. Take Saul, for example. Before he experienced Salvation on the road to Damascus, Saul (or Paul as he was later called) held the coats of men who stoned Stephen for his faith in Jesus Christ. Up to the moment of his conversion, he continued breathing out threatenings and slaughter against those who trusted in Jesus. All that time, Saul thought he was exercising Holy Hatred; he actually thought he was doing God a favour by executing those whom he considered to be heretics. But, Saul was wrong. Saul's hatred could not have been Holy because he did not yet know Jesus. There is no way we can be trusted to handle God's Holy Hatred until we come through Jesus' Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy.

## **B. Holy Mourning and Grief**

Holy Mourning and Grief also are found in God's Cold Armory of Redemptive Understanding.

Thus saith the Lord GOD; **In the day when he went down to the grave I caused a mourning**: I covered the deep for him, and I restrained the floods thereof, and the great waters were stayed: and **I caused Lebanon to mourn for him**, and all the trees of the field fainted for him (Ezekiel 31:15).

God does not rejoice when a nation or a person misses His Divine Will for their lives. When the Assyrian nation missed God's Will, as well as when Pharaoh missed it and had to be taken down into the depths, God covered the Deep Part of His Will and called a mourning in all Lebanon as a demonstration of His outward Mourning and the inward Grief of His Will.

The sadness we sometimes feel, for no apparent reason, may well be from this portion of God's Cold Will. Sadness is nothing but a demonstration to us that we have missed God's Will and, therefore, have caused Him to Mourn and Grieve. If we will humble ourselves and let Him show us where we have strayed from His Perfect Will, our grief will be healed, and joy will be restored to our land.

Lucifer stole some of God's Mourning Will and perverted it into sadness and self-pity. He uses corrupted mourning and grief as weapons of enmity against God, causing us to feel sad and mournful about God's Ordained Will for our life.

## **C. Holy Anger and Wrath**

Anger is the third Weapon in God's Armory of Redemptive Understanding.

Thou hast with thine arm redeemed thy people, the sons of Jacob and Joseph. Selah. The waters saw thee, O God, the waters saw thee; they were afraid: **the depths also were troubled** (Psalm 77:15,16).

Although the word *anger* is not used in our English translation of the above verses, it is very clear in the Hebrew text. The Hebrew word for *troubled*, in verse sixteen, means to quiver with violent emotion, especially anger or fear. We understand, then, that God's Anger comes out of His Reverential Fear or Respect for His Divine Will.

The above verses refer to when God unleashed the Anger of His Cold Will at Israel's crossing of the Red Sea. After bringing His people out of Egypt, God used His Cold Breath to stand up the water of the sea into icy walls and to freeze the depths into a solid way through the sea. Then, He used His Hot Breath to make a dry path on each side of the frozen way.

God's Will was for His children to cross over into the wilderness and continue their journey toward Canaan's Land. If the Egyptians had humbled their hearts on this occasion and accepted God's Will for their slaves and, therefore, for themselves, they would have received great blessings from the LORD. Instead, they made the foolish decision to follow the Israelites and get their slaves back, regardless of what God's Will was in the matter. When God looked out of the Pillar of Fire and Cloud and saw the Egyptians fearlessly pursuing the Israelites into the sea, His Anger was stirred to the very Depths. With just one angry look, God took the wheels off the Egyptians' chariots.

God's Holy Anger is manifested when His Divine Will is disrespected. Once we realize this Truth, there is no need to wait until He is forced to take off our chariot wheels, so to speak, before we get some reverential fear and respect for the LORD and for His Will. Whenever we feel God's Anger coming out toward us, we immediately should start looking to see where we fearlessly have disregarded His Will for ourselves or for others.

The Egyptians' behaviour at the Red Sea gives us a good picture of the workings of the corrupt anger man received from fallen Lucifer. The Bible tells us that, even when God melted the icy Walls of Death and melted the icy Street in the midst of the sea so that death started pouring in upon them, the Egyptians fled against the waters (Exodus 14:27). Notice their fearlessness. Instead of fleeing *from* God's waters of judgment, they ran *against* them in defiant anger. Man is stupid to think that he can pit his puny little anger against the Infinite, Frozen Anger of God.

#### **D. Holy Envy and Jealousy**

Holy Envy and Jealousy are found in God's Cold Armory of Redemptive Understanding.

And I will judge thee, as women that break wedlock and shed blood are judged; **and I will give thee blood in fury and jealousy** (Ezekiel 16:38).

God had taken the Nation of Israel to be His visible wife, as it were, from among the nations of the world, and she had known Him as a Bridegroom, as a Husband Who had made provision for all her needs, both spiritually and naturally. After her establishment in the land, she began making alliances with the heathen nations and soon started worshipping their gods. That is when the LORD said He would judge Israel as a woman who had broken wedlock — as an adulteress.

Over and over in the Bible, we read that God has said, "I am a jealous God." It is His Nature to be jealous for His Holiness. As an adulterous wife, Israel had brought shame and reproach to the LORD's Holy Name and, in so doing, had defiled His Holy Image among all the heathen nations. Israel's sin was great. Therefore, God was justified in giving her blood in fury and jealousy.

God said, in so many words, "I gave you My Exalted Will of Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy. I gave you My Will of Sincerity, Surrender, Gentleness, and Faith. I gave you My Will of Long-suffering, Goodness, Meekness or Humility, and Temperance. If you had received My Exalted Will into your heart, it would have worked those same qualities in you. But, you did not come to the Holy One of Israel. You did not come to My Word. You did not come over to the Cold Side of My Will so that I could form in your heart some Holy Hatred against sin and idolatry. Now I am going to take your idolatry and whip you with it."

Not a one of us would be alive today were it not for God's Mercy which keeps His Jealousy frozen most of the time. After God sees that we have been over on the Hot, Exalted Side of His Will long enough, He will melt some of His Cold Will — whether we like it or not. God always balances the Hot and Cold Sides of His Will in our life. We need not think that we can by-pass the two Wills of God. We either let God lead us to His Hot Exalted Will and, then, to His Cold Humility Will that will work Holy Hatred for sin; Holy Mourning and Grief; Holy Anger; and Holy Jealousy in our heart; or, we get acquainted with the second side of His Will while He is pouring out His

Jealous Judgment upon us.

Just knowing that God is jealous for the Holiness of His Image, His Name, His Land, and His Bride and for what He has put in her should give us a new appreciation for this portion of God's Cold Will. We should be grateful that He cares enough for us to be jealous and to judge us when we let our heart go out after strange lovers.

Fallen Lucifer stole some of the Envy and Jealousy from God's Cold Will and corrupted it into envy and jealousy for self's image, self's name, self's possessions, and self's loves. Man, when he is being driven by this side of his corrupted human will, can commit the most atrocious acts. People who read about one of man's heinous crimes sometimes say to themselves, even if they never give voice to their thoughts, "I would never do anything like that. Why, there is not a jealous bone in my body." Only a person who never has had a glimpse of his human will can make remarks like that. We all have corrupted envy and jealousy on the shaft of our human will. Therefore, it behooves us to let Jesus take us back and forth between His Hot Exalted Will and His Cold Humility Will until He works His Jealousy for Holiness in our heart.

### E. Holy Death

Darkness increases as we progress further into God's Armory of Redemptive Understanding, so we should not be surprised to find Death here on the Cold Side of God's Will.

See now that I, even I, am he, and there is no god with me: **I kill**, and I make alive; I wound, and I heal; neither is there any that can deliver out of my hand (Deuteronomy 32:39).

There is a definite difference between the Death on God's Will and the death on man's corrupted will, which he inherited from fallen Lucifer. Whatever God kills, He is able to make alive. When we kill, that is all we can do. We have no power to bring Life out of Death. Death on man's corrupted will means separation. However, Death on God's Will is merely change; it is regeneration. God brings us to Death in His Perfect Will in order to give us a new form of Life.

Many other Scriptures refer to Death on the Deep, Humility Side of God's Redemptive Will.

He rebuked the Red sea also, and it dried up: **so he led them through the depths**, as through the wilderness (Psalm 106:9).

Notice that God's Word distinguishes between the Red Sea and the *Depths*. This is because God dealt with each of them differently. He used His Hot Breath, in the form of an east wind, to dry up the path through the Red Sea, but He used His Cold Breath to freeze a way right through the middle of the Depths for His children to pass over. These facts are very clear in the account in Exodus.

And Moses stretched out his hand over the sea; and **the LORD caused the sea to go back by a strong east wind all that night**, and made the sea dry land, and the waters were divided (Exodus 14:21).

And with the blast of thy nostrils the waters were gathered together, the floods stood upright as an heap, and **the depths were congealed** in the heart of the sea (Exodus 15:8).

The Hebrew word for *congealed* means frozen. It could be no plainer. Remember, it was God's Redemptive Will working to get the Israelites out of Egypt. Why, then, did He freeze the Depths of His Will? It was because a person must be prepared properly for God's Deep Will; otherwise, it will work Death in him instead of Life.

Just look at God's Mercy. The Israelites were unprepared for the Depths, so God froze His Deep Will and let His children have the experience of feeling the Depths without actually going down into them.

On another occasion, God went to great lengths to give the rebellious Prophet Jonah a special trip down into the Depths of Death and Hell.

Then Jonah prayed unto the LORD his God out of the fish's belly. And said, I cried by reason of mine affliction unto the LORD, and he heard me; out of the belly of hell cried I, and thou heardest my voice. **For thou hadst cast me into the deep**, in the midst of the seas; and the floods compassed me about: all thy billows and thy waves passed over me (Jonah 2:1-3).

While Jonah's body was in the fish's belly, His spirit and soul were over in Hell, in the very Depths of God's Cold Will, with the billows and the waves passing over him. The billows which he felt were the billows of Death.

The word *billows*, in the Hebrew, means a breaker. It comes from another word meaning to break in pieces, to

crush, to burst, broken-hearted, bring to birth. The Hebrew word for *waves* means something that rolls like a wheel. It means a heap of stone. It also means dung or fertilizer.

God did not cast Jonah down into the Depths until He first had given the Prophet His Exalted Will. How do we know this? The first chapter of the Book of Jonah tells us that Jonah boarded a ship going to Tarshish because he was fleeing from the Presence of the LORD. In other words, he was fleeing from the Hot Exalted Breath of the LORD.

Several good thoughts can be gleaned from Jonah's experience. By his own admission, Jonah was rebelling against God's Will for his life; he was doing everything in his power to run away from the Presence of the LORD. Yet, in spite of the fact that Jonah was far from being in the Perfect Will of God, the whole ship's crew was saved because of his preaching. Getting people saved, then, is not necessarily an indication that a person is in God's Perfect Will. Jonah simply preached the Truth to the men, and they believed and were saved.

The salvation of these men did not change the fact that Jonah was running from the LORD. Not even the storm that threatened to destroy the ship and all its occupants was able to make Jonah humble himself enough to say that he would obey the Will of God. Although the men pled with him, he refused all counsel, saying, "Cast me forth into the sea." At that moment, Jonah thought he would rather die than do the Will of God. However, he changed his mind about the matter after he had had a firsthand experience with Death outside of God's Perfect Will.

Jonah refused God's Exalted Will, so God said, in so many words, "Okay, Jonah, if that is the way you want it, you can have My Deep Will." When the men threw Jonah overboard, the sea leveled off, and the ship went on its way. God sent a great fish along to swallow Jonah, and he soon was on his way down to Death and Hell.

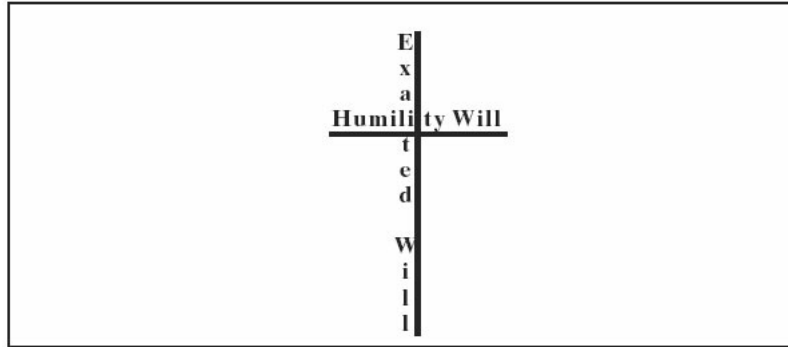
There is no way a human being could have survived in the fish's belly for three days and three nights because of the fish's tremendous digestive juices. God had to have worked a miracle to preserve Jonah's body while He gave him a taste of what it was like for a lost soul to go to Hell. The Bible says that *all* the billows and waves passed over the Prophet.

Why did God take Jonah down into the Depths and beat him with Death? Was it because He wanted to watch the Prophet suffer? No! Of course not. God put those Breakers over Jonah's spirit and soul for the purpose of crushing him, breaking him, and bringing to birth in him some new, surrendered life so that he could preach to the sinners in Nineveh. God also heaped a little fertilizer in the form of waves upon him while he was there so that he would be enriched by the experience later. As soon as Jonah started doing business on the Deep Side of God's Will and surrendered to go do what God wanted him to do, the LORD spoke to the fish, and it vomited Jonah out on the dry land.

Jonah may have had more surrenders to make later, but he gained enough humility while he was down in the Depths to go to Nineveh and declare the Word of the LORD. Without this Death-experience, Jonah never would have known the Pleasure of walking in new, surrendered Life.

In like manner, God has to take us through Death-experiences that may seem like Hell itself. If we really do business with God during these times of Death, we will come out with new Life and with a new portion of God's Will worked in us.

We frequently attribute the Death we feel to the Devil, when in reality we are feeling God's Death. He lets His Billows and Breakers come against us in order to break the hardness of our heart and to bring us to new births of surrender and obedience to Him. Many times the waves we feel being heaped upon our newly plowed earth are God's Waves. This is just God's Way of fertilizing us so that we can bring forth more abundant fruit when He takes us back over to the Exalted Side of His Will and gives us another opportunity to walk up and down in that Will. God also takes the two Sides of His Will and puts them in the form of a Cross so that we might learn the mystery of the Cross of Jesus.



It takes both God's Exalted Will and His Humility Will to form the Cross in our life. The Devil knows this, and most of us know it theoretically. The problem is that we do not always know it experientially.

Our ignorance gives the Devil room to take advantage of us. He delights in tormenting us when we are over on God's Deep Cold Will with the billows and waves crashing in upon us. He will say, "What good did being on the Exalted Side of God's Will do you? You fasted and prayed, and you were up so high. Now look at you. You are surrounded by Death, and everyone knows that Death belongs to me. You are completely out of God's Will. Give up. You may as well curse God and die." If we listen to him by fellowshipping his deceitful thinking, we will end up in the Devil's death instead of the LORD's Death.

The next time we feel Death, instead of throwing up both hands and saying, "What is the use?" we should say, "LORD, bless Your sweet Name! What are You trying to break in me now? Show it to me, Jesus." Jesus' Death is not destructive. It only brings a change. It brings separation from Lucifer's death and destruction; then, it brings new Life.

There is a great gulf between Jesus' Death and that of fallen Lucifer. The death of fallen Lucifer's will and also the death of our corrupted human will can work only separation. When we kill, it is murder because our will has no life joined to it nor any power to make alive again. When Jesus kills, by bringing Death to circumstances and things, He resurrects new circumstances and things full of His Will. He has the Power to kill and the Power to make alive.

## F. Holy Strife

Strife is the sixth Weapon in the Armory of God's Redemptive Understanding.

And the LORD said, **My spirit shall not always strive with man**, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years (Genesis 6:3).

In the days of Noah, the LORD said that His Spirit would not always strive with man. The Hebrew word for *strive* means to rule, to judge (as an umpire), also to strive (as at law), to contend, execute judgment, minister judgment, plead the cause, strife, strive.

By Noah's day, the world had degenerated into the depths of sin and degradation in Lucifer's will. Wickedness abounded. Yet, down into the muck and mire of sin, God came to strive with man. By His Spirit and by His servant Noah, God pleaded with sinful man for a hundred and twenty years. Year after year, the LORD extended His Cold Redemptive Will to man, always contending and pleading with man to repent before judgment had to be poured out upon him for his wickedness.

When Lucifer stole some of God's ability to plead and contend for Righteousness and for the LORD's Headship, he perverted it into strife for the high place. It is this kind of strife that now is joined to man's human will. When pride entered man's heart, instead of pleading for Righteousness and God's Headship, it started elbowing and pushing, trying to attain a position of honour for self. Whoever heard of self saying, "Oh, please, would you give me the low seat?" No. Proud strife says, "I am worthy of the high seat, and I will contend for that position. I will use my hatred, wrath, strife, and even murder, if necessary, to reach the high seat."

Lucifer does not mind that man uses his strife to exalt self, for he knows that it is through self that he receives exaltation. No one enjoys thinking that he is just a pawn in Lucifer's hands, but that is what we are until we let Jesus work our human will over and transform it into His own Likeness. Only then can we join Him in striving to exalt

God's Headship and God's Righteousness in every situation of life.

## G. Holy Womb

As we take the seventh step down into God's Cold Will, we find ourself in the Womb of His Redemptive Understanding. Here, God puts travailing pains on us which bend our human will into the humility position we must assume in order for new life to be begotten within us.

Since a womb is associated with the female and since we are dealing with God's Will, it is evident that God must possess female characteristics. One apparent proof of this statement is the fact that man, who was created in the Image and Likeness of God, was created male and female (Genesis 1:27). Another proof is seen in the various Names by which God revealed Himself to man. God's plurality, though not clearly distinguished as being male and female, is evident in His Name *Elohim*, translated into our English language as *God*. The uniplural noun *Elohim* requires a singular verb, showing that in the One Godhead there is plurality. In English, for example, we have uniplural nouns, such as *family* (made up of two or more persons) and *church* (made up of many people), which require singular verbs. We do not say, "The family *are* going." We say, "The family *is* going."

The Name *El Shaddai*, translated into the English language as *Almighty God* (Genesis 17:1), gives one of the clearest revelations of God's Female Side. The *El* of the Name comes from His Name *Elohim*. The *Shaddai* of the Name comes from the Hebrew word *shad*, which means the breast of a woman. So, God is a breasted God, a Female, as well as a Male God. God also has a Womb, which He referred to in His discussion with Job in chapter thirty-eight, verse twenty-nine.

If this were not true, then God had to go outside of Himself to create a female for Adam-male; and if He had to do that, then someone else existed besides God. But, God is All in All, and beside Him there is no God. It is God's Female Side that nourishes and feeds us, and it is the Female Side that possesses the begetting Womb.

The following Scriptures show what is born from God's great Womb of Redemptive Understanding.

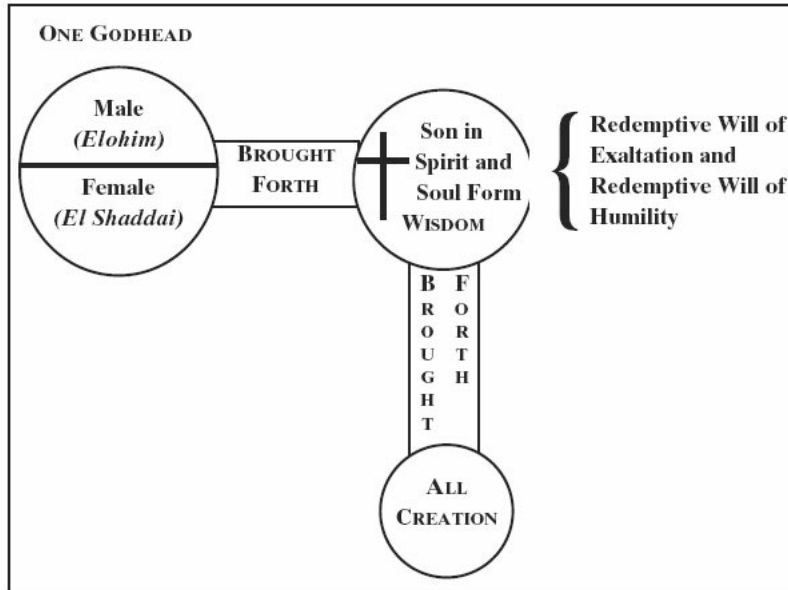
### 1. The Stature of the Begotten Son

The first thing travailed to birth from God's Redemptive Womb was the Stature of His only Begotten Son Who, in the beginning, was called Wisdom.

The LORD possessed me [Wisdom] in the beginning of his way, before his works of old. I was set up from everlasting, from the beginning, or ever the earth was. When there were no depths, **I was brought forth**; when there were no fountains abounding with water. Before the mountains were settled, before the hills was **I brought forth**: (Proverbs 8:22-25).

The Bible tells us that the LORD possessed Wisdom in the beginning of His Way. What was the beginning of His Way or His Will? Redemption! Although the word *womb* is not used in the above verses, the implication is there. The words *brought forth*, in the Hebrew, mean to twist or whirl (in a circular or spiral manner), to dance, to writhe in pain (*especially the pains of childbirth*) or fear, travail with pain.

In Eternity-Past, the Male-and-Female God travailed the Begotten Son into being in Spirit and Soul Form and brought Him forth out of the Womb of His Redemptive Will. The Begotten Son had a birth of God's Humility Redemptive Will, and He had a birth of God's Exalted Redemptive Will. Into the Son, God put His Wisdom. Then, using what He had put into the Son, He brought forth all creation.



Some people think this Scripture in Proverbs refers to God’s Wisdom, but they are mistaken. Such a line of reasoning would lead to the conclusion that at some time God had no Wisdom and that He had to grow in Wisdom. That is ridiculous! God always has been wise; He always has had a full Stature of Wisdom.

The Wisdom in the eighth chapter of Proverbs is the Wisdom of the Begotten Son, Who was brought forth out of God’s Redemptive Womb. That God is both Male and Female was clearly manifested when He created Adam-male and Adam-female to portray the Image of God. Therefore, through the Male or Father-God and the Female or Mother-Spirit of God, the Son of God was begotten. God had only one *Begotten* Son; all other creatures were *created*. Proverbs, chapter eight, verse thirty, clearly shows the Parent-Son relationship.

Then I was by him, as one **brought up** with him: and I was daily his delight, rejoicing always before him (Proverbs 8:30).

The Hebrew word for the expression *brought up*, in this case, means to foster up as a parent, to render firm or faithful, to be true or certain, to go to the right hand. The Begotten Son, called Wisdom, was fostered up or “Truthed up” by His Parents on the Humility Side, first. Then, He was set on the Right Hand of Power and Exaltation so that He might have a birth of the Exalted Will of His Father.

It is beautiful to behold the perfect balance between the Old and the New Testaments. In the New Testament, we find the same Truth taught concerning the Son’s preexistence.

Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear *Son*: In whom we have redemption [the Exaltation Redemption and the Humility Redemption] through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: **Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature**: For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: **all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist**. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence. For it pleased the Father that in him [the Son] should all fulness dwell; (Colossians 1:12-19).

Here is confirmation of what we read in Proverbs. The Son was begotten first; then, all creation came out of Him. Speaking of Jesus, Who now is called Christ (Acts 2:36), Paul said: “In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge” (Colossians 2:3). The Greek word for *hid* means to deposit and to place in a horizontal position. So, in Jesus Christ are hid all the horizontal positions of God.

In the Book of Job, God recorded something more about His Deep Will.

Hast thou entered into the springs of the sea? or **hast thou walked in the search of the depth?** (Job 38:16).

This is the question God put to Job when Job was complaining in the depths of his bitterness about being changed from the Exalted Will to the Humility Will. According to Job’s thinking, he had been plunged from the Heights of Exaltation to the very Depths of Humility — to the Womb of God’s Deep Will. However, God let Job know that he

still was on the first step of the Cold Humility Will.

Job was nowhere near the Womb as long as he was standing upright in his will. He had not yet searched the Depths of God's reason for stripping him of the exaltation he had known; he had not yet let the pain of travail begin to bend his will and bring him into a position of experiencing a new birth of the Son's Stature in his heart.

Afterward, when God finished speaking with him, Job reached this stage of humility experience in the Womb of God's Night Will, for he said, "I have heard of thee by the hearing of the ear: but now mine eye seeth thee. Wherefore I abhor myself, and repent in dust and ashes" (Job 42:5,6). Job had a birth of humility that he never would have had if the LORD had not brought him over to the Deep Side of His Redemptive Will. Job had to have that experience with God's Cold Will in order to be redeemed from the spiritual pride he had acquired during the time God had had him in His Day Will.

The Book of Job reveals why it is necessary for us to come through the Son to get to God. The reason is that God gave up something when He gave birth to His Son. In Job 28:12,13, we read, "But where shall wisdom be found? and where is the place of understanding? Man knoweth not the price thereof; neither is it found in the land of the living." Man does not know the price it cost God when He took of Himself and brought it to birth in His Son. Wisdom was not found in the Earth when this verse in Job was written because the Son had not, at that time, come to Earth and taken on a Body of flesh. In answer to the question concerning the whereabouts of Wisdom, the Depth said, "It is not in me:..." (Job 28:14). The deep part of God's Will was saying, "Wisdom is not in Me. It is over in My Son."

This is why we cannot come to God without coming through the Son. God placed His Redemptive Wisdom in His Son. It is no wonder that man had no knowledge of the price of Wisdom. How could he? Who was present when the Father-Mother God travailed His only Begotten Son to birth? Who was there when God emptied out of Himself and put all the Treasures of Wisdom and Knowledge into His Son? Who was there when God brought His Son forth out of the Womb of His Will of Redemptive Understanding?

The Gospel of John discloses a mystery concerning the Son's continual Oneness of Relationship with this Redemptive Womb.

No man hath seen God at any time; **the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father**, he hath declared him (John 1:18).

The Greek word for *bosom* means a bay of water. It refers to the frozen Loins or Womb of God. Notice that the Scripture says this: "...the only begotten Son, which is [present tense] in the bosom of the Father." In Eternity-Past, Jesus was brought forth, in Spirit and Soul Form, out of the Redemptive Womb; in Time, He was brought forth into the world in a physical Body.

Agnostics and unbelievers love to use Scriptures such as this to say that the Bible contradicts itself. However, there is no contradiction when we take into account the Principle of God's Separation and His Omnipresence. There is a sense in which God can be separated, but there is another sense in which He never can be separated.

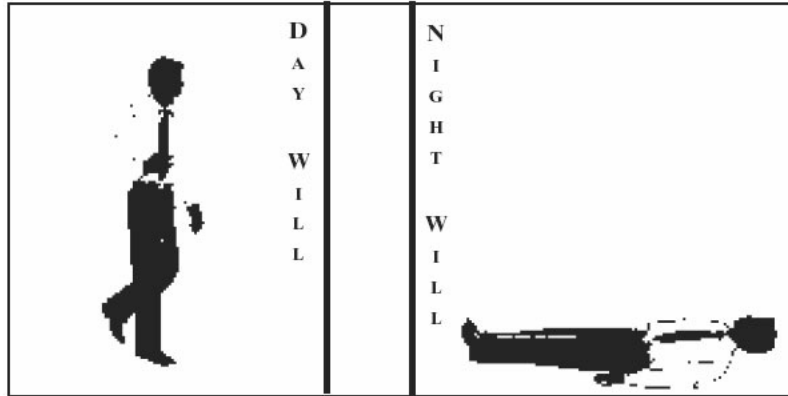
We know that the Begotten Son was brought forth out of the invisible God. The Book of Hebrews tells us that He was the express Image of God's Person (Hebrews 1:3). Into this Son, God emptied His Treasures of Wisdom and Knowledge; then, God stood the Son out where He could be seen and touched and handled. In that sense, the Son was separated. In another sense, in the sense of the Son's Oneness with His Father, He never left that Bosom or Bay of Water. Although He stood down on Earth and walked among men, His Heart and His Will always were joined to the Will of His Father in Heaven.

If we want to bring something to birth legitimately, it must be done in the Redemptive Will of God, and it must be done in God's Order. Only in one sense did the Depths of God's Will say of Wisdom, "It is not in me." Wisdom was not in the Depths because it had been brought forth; yet, it was in the Depths in the Person of God's Son. Jesus said, "I and my Father are one" (John 10:30). He also said, "...the Father is in me, and I in him" (John 10:38). Because of God's Omnipresence, this Oneness of Relationship could be carried on even while Jesus was limited to the form of a human Body. We know that it still is working, for Jesus now enjoys an Eternal Union with God (Acts 2:36). In order to get to God's Redemptive Will, we *must* come through Jesus, the only Begotten Son in Whom God has placed His Redemptive Wisdom, Revelation Understanding, and Satisfaction Knowledge.

We have seen that the Stature of the Son was born out of God's Redemptive Womb. The Father-Mother God travailed for the Son's Stature to be born into the world; but ***in order for the fullness of Christ's Stature to be born in us, we personally must descend into the Depths of God's Redemptive Womb so that pains of travail may bend***

**our human will and redeem us from our pride and self-will.** Only through travail can we be brought into the position for the Stature of the Son's Will to stand up tall and straight within our heart.

The Father knows that the Son's Stature is too enormous for a human to travail into being at one time. We could not bear the pain if it came all at once. This is why the LORD mercifully switches us back and forth from the Exalted Side of His Will to the Deep Humility Side.



We must learn to love the Side of God's Will on which He puts us, whatever Side that may be, instead of always wanting to be on the Exalted Side by gift. As soon as we learn our lesson on the Cold Side of God's Will, He will let true Exaltation be travailed to birth in our life.

## 2. True Exaltation

True Exaltation is born out of God's Redemptive Womb of Humility.

*Thou*, which hast shewed me great and sore troubles, shall quicken me again, and **shalt bring me up again from the depths of the earth** (Psalm 71:20).

Notice that the Psalmist did not say, "God, just look at what all those people are doing to me. If it were not for them, I could go on for God. They are giving me so many sore troubles that I just cannot make it." No, he said, in so many words, "God, *Thou* hast shewed me great and sore troubles. God, it is You Who has brought me down into Your great Womb. It is You Who has put this sore travail on me."

As a result of acknowledging God's Headship over the pain in his life, David received the prophetic revelation that God was going to quicken him and bring him up again, out of the Depths, with new Exaltation, with new Resurrection Life and Glory.

The secret to hearing the Prophet speak the Word which will give us hope to believe for new Life and true Exaltation is to start acknowledging God's Supreme Headship over all pleasure and all pain. Once we learn this secret, we stop blaming others, and we cease to resent the pain because we know that it takes the pain to travail true Exaltation to birth out of the Womb of God's Deep Humility Will.

The Book of Psalms gives another example of Exaltation coming out of the Depths, after our acknowledgement of the LORD's Headship.

Oh that men would praise the LORD for his goodness, and for his wonderful works to the children of men! And let them sacrifice the sacrifices of thanksgiving, and declare his works with rejoicing. They that go down to the sea in ships, that do business in great waters; These see the works of the LORD, and his wonderful wonders in the deep. For he commandeth, and raiseth the stormy wind, which lifteth up the waves thereof. They mount up to the heaven, they go down again to the depths: their soul is melted because of trouble. **They reel to and fro, and stagger like a drunken man, and are at their wit's end. Then they cry unto the LORD in their trouble, and he bringeth them out of their distresses** (Psalm 107:21-28).

A sailor out in the midst of a natural storm is wise enough to realize that it is God Who stirs up the wind and the waves; he knows how ridiculous it would be to waste time blaming the captain or any member of the crew for his discomfort.

Why, then, can we not recognize the same Principle in the spiritual realm? Why, when God has us in *deep waters*

and our little ship is being beaten with *painful waves*, do we waste time blaming the *waves* for our trouble? Why do we let the travail cause us to forget what God has us in the Deep to accomplish — which is to intercede and travail for more of the Son's Stature to be born in our heart and to travail until He can bring us out of the Deep Womb of His Will with Exaltation Glory, by stature rather than by gift.

Failure to recognize that all Exaltation, whether by gift or by stature, comes from God's Redemptive Womb causes people to have problems accepting political leaders and spiritual leaders that God sets over them. In Romans 13:1, we read these words: "Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God." The Greek word for *ordained* means to arrange in an orderly manner, i.e., assign or dispose (to a certain position or lot), addict, appoint, determine, ordain, set. This Scripture is in complete agreement with what the Old Testament teaches about nations and leaders being set up by the Deep Redemptive Will of God.

And it came to pass in the eleventh year, in the third month, in the first day of the month, that the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, Son of man, speak unto Pharaoh king of Egypt, and to his multitude; Whom art thou like in thy greatness? Behold, the Assyrian [nation] was a cedar in Lebanon with fair branches, and with a shadowing shroud, and of an high stature; and his top was among the thick boughs. The waters made him great, **the deep set him up on high** with her rivers running round about his plants, and sent out her little rivers unto all the trees of the field. Therefore his height was exalted above all the trees of the field, and his boughs were multiplied, and his branches became long because of the multitude of waters, when he shot forth (Ezekiel 31:1-5).

A natural womb is for the purpose of protecting and preserving life until it grows sufficiently to survive outside the womb. This ministry of the spiritual womb is involved when God's Deep Redemptive Will sets nations and leaders up on high. This is true whether the leader is a good person or an evil one, whether the nation is God fearing or heathen.

This Principle can be seen clearly in connection with the nations of Israel and Assyria. God raised up the nation of Israel and gave her a taste of both His Wills. Abraham received the beginning revelation of these two Wills. The Hot-Glory Will of God appeared to Abraham in the land of Mesopotamia to give the patriarch a vision of the Holy Jerusalem in Heaven. The Bible says that Abraham went out looking for a city. As Abraham walked on that miraculous, Exalted Side, God gave him a miraculous son, called Isaac. God showed Abraham the stars of Heaven and promised him that his Seed would be like the stars.

Then, God said, in so many words, "Now let us consider the other side of My Will." This is when God told Abraham that his Seed would go down into Egypt and suffer great affliction for four hundred years. Yet, God promised Abraham, way back there, that his Seed would come out with great substance — great Exaltation.

So, the Nation of Israel had a background in both of God's Wills. God intended that she let her Exaltation Life continue growing until she had matured spiritually enough to be made the hub of all the nations. However, after entering Canaan's Land, Israel let the Pride of Exaltation cause her to disobey God and sin against Him. Had God permitted Israel to go on in her willful way, all spiritual Life would have been snuffed out before it was time for the Saviour to be born into the world.

At this point in history, God's Redemptive Will exalted the Assyrian Nation to exercise power over Israel. God's Redemptive Purpose in the Exaltation of Assyria and the humbling of Israel was to preserve spiritual Life in Israel. God took Israel back down into the Deep Place so that He might give the Life and Stature of His Son an opportunity to grow more.

There is no telling how God would have blessed the nation of Assyria if it had stayed within the bounds of God's Will and had used Exaltation as God intended for it to be used. But, because Assyria became proud of its Exaltation and went beyond the Will of God by putting more chastisement on its captives than the LORD originally had intended, God had to cut down the great nation or tree of Assyria.

The purpose of the Deep Side of God's Redemptive Will is to help us grow more humility stature and to travail more Exaltation to birth. Then, we are ready to travail true prosperity to birth.

### 3. True Prosperity

An example of the Prosperity that is brought forth out of the Womb of God's Redemptive Will is seen in the Book of Genesis.

Even by the God of thy father, who shall help thee; and by the Almighty, who shall bless thee with blessings of heaven above, **blessings of the deep** that lieth under, blessings of the breasts, **and of the womb**: The blessings of thy father have prevailed above the blessings of my

progenitors unto the utmost bound of the everlasting hills: they shall be on the head of Joseph, and on the crown of the head of him that was separate from his brethren (Genesis 49:25,26).

These verses are part of the prophetic blessing pronounced on Joseph by his dying father. Jacob could give this prophetic Promise of increased Prosperity to Joseph because Joseph had drunk deeply of God's Frozen Redemptive Will while he was down in Egypt, and he had allowed a stature of humility to come up within his heart.

Although the Bible may not say, in so many words, that Joseph experienced a birth of humility stature while he was in Egypt, we can know this simply by noting his behaviour toward his brothers who sold him into Egyptian slavery. Joseph did not go into Egypt as its second most important ruler. This exaltation came only after years of servitude in Potiphar's house, after being lied about, imprisoned, and forgotten. Finally, God created circumstances that made a way for Joseph to be released from prison and exalted, ultimately, to the second most important position in the land.

When famine forced Joseph's brothers to come to Egypt in search of food, they failed to recognize their brother Joseph as the impressive ruler who stood before them. However, Joseph had no problem identifying the men who, years before, had cast him into a pit and finally had sold him into bondage. As the Governor of Egypt, Joseph had the power to put his brothers to death, if he so desired. All he had to do was to refuse them food, and they and their families would have starved. He had the power, if he had wanted to use it, to have tormented them for days; he could have lined them up and accused them, blasphemed them, degraded them, and reproached them for their treatment of him. But, he did none of those things. Instead, he stood before them and acknowledged God's Headship over all the pain he had experienced at their hands and all the exaltation he had experienced in Egypt.

...I am Joseph your brother, whom ye sold into Egypt. Now therefore be not grieved, nor angry with yourselves, that ye sold me hither: **for God did send me before you to preserve life.** For these two years hath the famine been in the land: and yet there are five years, in the which there shall neither be earing nor harvest. **And God sent me before you to preserve you a posterity in the earth, and to save your lives by a great deliverance. So now it was not you that sent me hither, but God:** and he [God] hath made me a father to Pharaoh, and lord of all his house, and a ruler throughout all the land of Egypt (Genesis 45:4-8).

It took true humility for Joseph to acknowledge God's Headship in sending him down to Egypt, and it took more humility to acknowledge that it was God Who had exalted him, removing him from the low place and blessing him with Prosperity greater than that of his brothers. Joseph's Humility Stature, his Exaltation, and his Prosperity all came out of the Womb of God's Deep Redemptive Will.

Lucifer took the part of the Womb that he stole and corrupted it into travail for personal recognition, personal exaltation, and personal prosperity. Instead of wanting the Begotten Son of God to grow, be exalted, and blessed in his heart, he travailed for the birth of the stature of his own will. He travailed for the exaltation of his own beauty, and he travailed to be made more prosperous than his fellows.

We have inherited a human will that has the same nature and disposition as Lucifer's will. This is why we must descend through the Hatred, Grief, Anger, Jealousy, Death, and Strife of God's Cold Will until we come to the very Womb of Humility, for it is here that we travail to bring about a new birth of the Stature of the Will of the Son, even Jesus, in our heart, to bring about a new birth of the Son's Exaltation Glory and a new birth of the Fruitful Prosperity of the Son.

## H. Holy Covering

At the very bottom of God's Cold Redemptive Will is His Humility Truth or Word.

Who laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever. **Thou coveredst it with the deep as with a garment:** the waters stood above the mountains (Psalm 104:5,6).

God's Word of Truth is the foundation of all things.

God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets, Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds; Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, **and upholding all things by the word of his power,** when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high; (Hebrews 1:1-3).

Scientists know that there is some secret pull which keeps everything from flying in different directions; they call this Force the Law of Gravity. What they do not know is that the magnetic Force at the bottom of everything

actually is the Truth; they do not know that it is the Power of God's Word which holds our Earth in its proper orbit and which holds every one of us in place on this Earth. This mystery is hidden to the scientific world and to all others who never have walked far enough down into God's Cold Redemptive Will to be covered with the Humility Garment that would allow them to look upon the Foundations of Truth.

Since God uses all, not just part, of His Deep Humility Will to cover His Beginning Principles of Truth, there must be a very important reason for His doing so. The reason is because the Depths of Truth are too Sacred and too Holy to expose them to those who are merely curious to know the secrets of all Existence and all Power.

Exactly what is the Nature of God's Humility Will? What is the Nature of the Covering of Truth? Beloved, it is a deep Love for the Truth. It is a Love that is willing to go to the depths of Death and Hell, if necessary, to be joined to all the Truth in God's Will. Jesus had this kind of Love; and if we let Him, He will work this same kind of Love in our hearts.

Lucifer stole some of the Love from this side of the dark Humility Will, perverted it into love for a lie, and passed it on to our first parents, Adam-male and Adam-female. This portion of man's corrupted human will loves to be deceived about the wickedness and selfishness of self. This part of his will makes a man choose to love a lie and be damned rather than to love the Truth that will save him from sin and from self.

And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; **because they received not the love of the truth**, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness (II Thessalonians 2:8-12).

In the Gospel of John is further proof of man's corrupted will, which he inherited from fallen Lucifer, and his loving a lie rather than loving the Truth.

Jesus said unto them, If God were your Father, **ye would love me** [Humility Truth]: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me. Why do ye not understand my speech? even because ye cannot hear my word. **Ye are of your father the devil**, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the truth, because **there is no truth in him**. **When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar**, and the father of it (John 8:42-44).

Ever since Adam accepted the corrupt will of fallen Lucifer in the Garden of Eden, every human being, with the exception of Jesus Christ, has come into this world with a will that loves a lie. The nature and the depths of our natural love for deceit can be exposed only as we allow God to take us down, down, down into the Depths of His Humility Will until we see Jesus' Love for the Truth that took Him all the way down into the very Pit for you and me. Only then can we truly repent and let Jesus fill our will with a new love for His Humility Truth.

God's Cold Will of Holy Redemptive Understanding includes Hatred, Mourning or Grief, Anger or Wrath, Envy and Jealousy, Death, Strife, a Womb, and a Covering of Love for the Truth, which is the very bottom of God's Humility Will.

Now, we are ready to investigate Revelation Wisdom on the Cold Side of Jesus' Will.

## II. God's Cellar or Garner of Holy Revelation Wisdom

Surplus food is stored in cellars and garner in the natural realm. On the Deep, Cold Side of Jesus' Will, there is a Garner in which He stores His Revelation Wisdom in a frozen form until it is time to bring it forth in other forms.

The world has a wisdom, but it is nothing to compare with Jesus' Revelation Wisdom. Only Jesus' Deep Revelation can enlighten us with Wisdom to make the right choice between good and evil.

In His Garner of Revelation Wisdom, Jesus keeps four things that pertain to the Depths of His Will: (1) the Eyes of the Deep; the Judgments of the Deep; (3) the Calling of the Deep; and (4) the Praise of the Deep.

### A. Eyes of the Deep

We encounter the "Eyes" of the Deep first as we descend into the Garner of Jesus' Revelation Wisdom.

When he prepared the heaven, I [Wisdom] **was there**: when he set a compass upon the face of the depth: When he established the clouds above: **when he strengthened the fountains of the deep**: (Proverbs 8:27, 28).

There are several different Hebrew words for *fountain*. The one used in verse twenty-eight is the Hebrew word *ahyin*, which means an eye, by analysis, a fountain (as the eye of the landscape). The connotation is that when a fountain first bubbles up out of the Earth, it is like an eye because its visible appearance gives man a vision or a revelation of a vast underground reservoir of clear, pure water. Sight, then, imparts a certain class of wisdom. If a person looks at the fountain, for example, he knows what the rest of the water is like, even though it has not yet bubbled out into the visible realm.

Some of God's spiritual Fountains give man a revelation of the crystal clear Wisdom that will be bubbling up and out of Jesus throughout Eternity. This Fountain-Eye of the Deep allows man to see as God sees, and this sight gives man the power to make right choices — Eternal Choices.

## **B. Judgments of the Deep**

True Judgments are found in the Garner of Revelation Wisdom on the Cold Side of Jesus' Will.

Thy righteousness is like the great mountains; **thy judgments are a great deep**: O LORD, thou preservest man and beast (Psalm 36:6).

In Hebrew, the word for *judgment* means a verdict, a decree. It puts one in the position of being a judge who must make decisions or choices between good and evil, justice and injustice, right and wrong. God's Judgments, God's Choices, come out of His Fountain of Deep Revelation Will.

Man's days on Earth are but a handbreadth; yet, within this short span, man makes choices which determine his Eternal Destiny. Since every man chooses according to what he sees, it is vitally important for us to receive Jesus' Fountain Eyesight which enables us to see as God sees. Only then will we have the Wisdom and the Power to make right Eternal Choices.

We cannot choose properly until we walk on the Exalted Side of Jesus' Day Will, come down through His Redemptive Understanding on the Deep, Cold Side, and, then, get lifted up to the High Place of His Cold Will so that we can look through His Fountain Eyesight. When we choose from this place of Revelation, we never have a desire to change our mind about what we want.

Fallen Lucifer knew the power of illuminated vision because he had known it by gift in Eternity-Past. He stole some of this Revelation Eyesight and corrupted it to suit his own evil purposes. Now, in his Satanic form, he has depths, but they are not to be compared with the Revelation that comes out of the Depths of Jesus' Humility Will.

Lucifer switched the order of Revelation and Redemption when, as the Serpent, he tempted Adam-female. He knew he never could influence Adam-male and Adam-female's choice if they followed God's Order and let the Father's Day Will in Jesus (of Love, Joy, Peace, and Mercy) be joined to His Night Will (which includes Holy Hatred for sin; Mourning and Grief; Holy Anger; Envy and Jealousy for Holiness; Death; Strife that contends for what is right; the Humility Womb, which gives birth to more humility stature; and, His Covering of Love for Truth) and if they let the Sincerity, Surrender, Gentleness, and Faith of the Father's Day Will in Jesus be joined to His Revelation-Wisdom Eyesight on the Night Side of His Will.

The Serpent knew that Adam-male and Adam-female would make the right choice if they ever looked out through God's Eyes of Wisdom, and he would lose forever his opportunity to control man's human will. That is why he quickly presented his own revelation — a revelation which he called life.

When Adam-female accepted the Serpent's revelation, she saw the Tree of Knowledge exactly as the Serpent saw it. That which was forbidden by God suddenly became desirable. That which God had said would bring Death, if eaten prematurely, suddenly became a tree of life. Everything just was reversed because Adam-female was looking through the Serpent's corrupted eyesight. Our first parents missed it because they made their choice before they got the Fountains of Light and Understanding that belong to the Cold Side of Jesus' Revelation Wisdom.

We can profit by their mistake if, when the Devil comes with his corrupted revelation, we tell him that we will make no decision until we have gone God's Route and had a chance to look through His crystal clear Fountain of Revelation-Wisdom Eyesight. Then, we will be able to see clearly which Will to choose all over again.

## **C. Calling of the Deep**

There is a Deep Place in Jesus' Exalted Will and a Deep Place in His Humility Will, and these two Deep Places call to each other.

**Deep calleth unto deep** at the noise of thy waterspouts: all thy waves and thy billows are gone over me (Psalm 42:7).

When we have ascended to the Heights and have gone to the Depths of the Day Side of Jesus' Will, the Deep Part of His Night Will starts calling to the Depths of Exaltation, saying, "Send him over to me so that he may get acquainted with the Depths of Humility." So, the Hot, Exalted Will says, "All right, I will deliver him to you right now. You can have him."

Sometimes the Calling and Transaction of the Depths of God's two Wills occur while we are asleep, naturally speaking. We go to bed at night in Exaltation, but we wake up in the morning over in God's Deep Humility Will.

If we are ignorant of how the Calling of the Deep works, the Devil can cause us to think that we have missed God's Will somewhere along the way. However, the fact that we are on the Cold Side of God's Will does not necessarily mean that we have missed God's Will. Very often, it simply is time for a change of something in us, and God has to put us over on the Night Side of His Will so that He can put some billows and waves over us to break new realms of hardness in our human will.

If we humble ourself until we gain Jesus' Humility Love for the Truth and until we are lifted up to the High Place of Revelation Wisdom on the Night Side of Jesus Will, we will see that Fountain-Eye bubble up out of the Deep. Then, we will see God's Wisdom in bringing us the route He has brought us. We will get a revelation that it all was for our good and for His Glory. We also will see that the very thing the Devil tried to make us run from is, in reality, our salvation. Instead of giving up, we can stand in the middle of the icy River of Humility and say, "Jesus, I choose You. I choose Your Hot Will, and I choose Your Cold Will. I choose everything that You have chosen for me." We never want to change this class of choice because we already have seen.

#### **D. Praise of the Deep**

The most profound level of praise is found in the deepest level of Jesus' Garner of Revelation Wisdom.

**Praise the LORD from the earth, ye dragons, and all deeps:**Fire, and hail; snow, and vapour; stormy wind fulfilling his word: Mountains, and all hills; fruitful trees, and all cedars: Beasts, and all cattle; creeping things, and flying fowl: Kings of the earth, and all people; princes, and all judges of the earth: Both young men, and maidens; old men and children: Let them praise the name of the LORD: for his name alone is excellent; his glory is above the earth and heaven (Psalm 148:7-13).

The name *LORD*, spelled in our English Bible with all capital letters, is the secret Tetragrammaton Name that was written in the Ark of the Covenant of the Old Testament Tabernacle. The pronunciation of this Name was handed down from father to son in the Aaronic Priesthood. Translators have inserted the vowels to form the word *Jehovah*, which means the Self-existent One Who reveals Himself and His Faithfulness. Thus, the Name LORD signifies His Revealing Power.

Habakkuk the Prophet also spoke of the praises the Depths offer up to the LORD.

The mountains saw thee, and they trembled: the overflowing of the water passed by: **the deep uttered his voice, and lifted up his hands on high** (Habakkuk 3:10).

Out of their nothingness, their lowness before Him, all the Deep Places in the LORD's Will sing praises and lift up their hands in worship unto Him. The Depths sing praises that they are nothing and that He is everything. They sing that the LORD is All in All, that He is worthy of all praise and honour and glory. They sing praises to the Truth.

How very much more, then, should we, as mortal human beings, praise the LORD for the revelation of our nothingness, our lowness before the LORD? How very much more should we praise Him by acknowledging that we are nothing in comparison to Him, and how very much more should we magnify the Truth that we deserve nothing? How very much more should we praise the Truth that the LORD is worthy of the praises of the Heavens, the Earth, and everything that is under the Earth?

It is one thing to have the revelation of praising the LORD when we are on the Day Side of His Will — when all is going well for us and when we are swimming around in exaltation and glory. It is another thing, entirely, to have the revelation of deep praising that goes up to the LORD while we are down in the Depths of His Night Will with the icy waters of humiliation and suffering swirling over our head. Deep praising satisfies the LORD's Heart as no other praise can satisfy it.

People rebel when they experience the icy Waters of Jesus' Deep Will because they think that they are worthy of more exaltation than God is giving them at that moment. However, bitter waters of rebellion need not flow out of us

if we choose to let Jesus crucify our corrupted will so that we can join our praises to the deep praises that are coming up out of the Depths of His Will.

There is no reason for us to strive for premature exaltation once we get a vision of the Cellar on the Humility Side of God's Revelation Wisdom. Beautiful are the Fountain-Eyes of the Deep. Just and right are the Judgments which come out the Depths of His Revelation Wisdom. Eternal changes are wrought in our heart as we learn to hearken to the Deep and cooperate with its calling. We also learn what true praise is all about while we are down in the Depths of Jesus' Humility Will. Humility Revelation Wisdom is what prepares us to walk in Jesus' Will of Satisfaction Knowledge and come to know the Treasures He keeps in His Treasure House.

### **III. God's Treasure House of Holy Satisfaction Knowledge**

In His Treasure House of Satisfaction Knowledge, on the Deep Side of His Will, Jesus hides the following two kinds of Fountains: His Fountain of Satisfaction and His Fountain of Procreation. These Fountains pertain to the two main blessings of Marriage Union. Let us look, first, at the Fountain of Satisfaction.

#### **A. Fountain of Satisfaction**

Fountains come up out of a subterranean water supply. They have their origin in the Depths. As we already have mentioned, several different Hebrew words are used to identify different classes of fountains. Jesus' Fountain of Satisfaction is the first one described in the fifth chapter of Proverbs.

Drink waters out of thine own cistern, and running waters out of thine own well. **Let thy fountains be dispersed abroad**, and rivers of waters in the streets (Proverbs 5:15,16).

The Hebrew word for *fountains*, in this case, is *mahyawnaw*, which means a fountain, source of satisfaction, spring, well. The wise man compared a man's wife to a fountain, for the wife is the man's source of satisfaction and pleasure in the natural realm. There is a special satisfaction in marriage that can be found in no other relationship.

God has put His blessing on natural marriage because it is a picture of the satisfaction and pleasure that belong to the spiritual Marriage Relationship between Jesus Christ and His Bride.

When Solomon told his son to let the fountain of satisfaction bubble up and be dispersed abroad, he did not mean that the intimate, personal relationship itself be made public for all to see. He meant for the husband and the wife to let the blessing of their union run out and bless others. When the husband goes to work, for instance, he cannot take his wife with him, but he can take the blessing of their marriage union with him. He can tell his co-workers what a good wife he has and what a good housekeeper and cook she is. This blesses him by keeping his image of his wife clear and bright in his mind, and it blesses everyone who listens. Every time he speaks of his wife, he is letting the rivers of that fountain of satisfaction run out.

As Christians who have a Heavenly Bridegroom, we can practice this Principle in the spiritual realm. We cannot share our personal, satisfying Union with Jesus Christ with anyone else, but we can let that Fountain of Satisfaction run out and bless others. Instead of murmuring and complaining about the things that cause us distress or pain, we can let the Satisfying Knowledge of Jesus' Headship bubble up in our heart and flow out of our mouth. This sanctifies our image of our Bridegroom's Holiness and Goodness, and it blesses everyone around us.

#### **B. Fountain of Procreation**

Let thy fountain be blessed: and rejoice with the wife of thy youth. Let her be as the loving hind and pleasant roe; let her breasts satisfy thee at all times: and be thou ravished always with her love (Proverbs 5:18,19).

The Hebrew word for *fountain* in verse eighteen is *mawkore*, which means something dug, i.e. a source of water, even when naturally flowing; also the source of tears, blood; happiness, wisdom.

Here, again, the writer of the Book of Proverbs used a natural picture to portray a spiritual Truth. Procreating pleasure is found in the marriage union when two hearts come together to bring forth a new form of life. In the natural realm, there are tears in the father and tears in the mother, but they must come together in a procreative union in order to produce a child who is a new source of tears. There is blood in the father and blood in the mother, but the child that is begotten of their procreative marriage union is the source of a new blood supply.

The same Principle applies in regard to happiness and wisdom in the natural realm; there must be a procreative union between the husband and the wife in order for a new source of happiness and wisdom to be brought to birth.

The Procreative Principle also applies in the spiritual realm; there must be a Procreative Union between our heart and the Heart of Jesus in order for a new source of tears, blood, happiness, and wisdom to be brought forth. For example, we know that Jesus was a Source of tears, for He wept over the city of old Jerusalem, and He wept at Lazarus' tomb. And, each of us has tears which we have poured out because of the suffering we have known in this life. However, for a new fountain of tears to be created in our heart, there must be a procreative Marriage Union between our heart and the Heart of Jesus. Our tears must mingle and become one. As we humbly bow at the Feet of Jesus, weeping over the things in us that have caused Jesus to weep, then He, in turn, weeps over us and over the things which have caused us to weep. Here, in the secret chamber, hidden away from all others, two lonely hearts are mysteriously knit together in a new way as Jesus' broken Heart and our broken heart are mended and made one whole new heart, which then breaks out into a fountain of new tears.

This new fountain does not weep tears of pain but tears of pleasure that God loves us enough to prepare just the class of suffering it takes to bring us into spiritual Marriage Union with the broken Heart of Jesus Christ. In Eternity-Future, we still will be weeping tears of pleasure that He counted us worthy to suffer with Him. Hallelujah! Praise the matchless Name of Jesus Christ. He is KING OF KINGS AND LORD OF LORDS!

It is mind-bending to think that the blessed and only Potentate of all ages should love mortal human beings so much that He would take infinite pains to bring them through His Exalted Will of Redemptive Understanding, Revelation Wisdom, and Satisfaction Knowledge on the Day Side of His Will and, then, through His Armory of Redemptive Understanding, His Cellar of Revelation Wisdom, and His Treasure House of Satisfaction Knowledge on the Deep Humility Side of His Night Will so that they, in turn, might be made one with His Fountain of Satisfaction and His Fountain of Procreation.

This beautiful Will of God is the Origin and Source of all Holy Love and all Holy Hatred and Anger.

---

\* B. R. Hicks, *Drops Of Doctrine* (Jeffersonville, Indiana: Christ Gospel Churches Int'l, Inc., 1975).

# Chapter Two

## The Origin Of Sin

How sin originated is, no doubt, one of the most difficult of all theological questions to address. When we read God's Word, we see that the Principle of all things having their origin in God was set forth by God Himself and spoken through the Prophet Isaiah.

**I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God beside me:**... For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited: **I am the LORD; and there is none else** (Isaiah 45:5,18).

Since the LORD said, "There is no God beside me:...there is none else," we must conclude that *all things* emanated from Him. How, then, do we reconcile the matter of sin? Can God, Who is Holy and Righteous, be the Perpetrator of sin? If so, how can this possibly be? If not, then, where did sin come from in the beginning? The answers to these and all other perplexing questions are revealed in God's Word, the Bible.

All revelation begins with God Himself: "In the beginning *God*..." And this God "created the heaven and the earth" (Genesis 1:1). The Prophet Isaiah made further note of God's original creation of the Earth.

For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; **God himself that formed the earth and made it;** he hath established it, he created it not in vain [empty, void, meaningless], he formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else (Isaiah 45:18).

God created the earth to be inhabited. His original creation was beautiful and useful, but sin provoked God's Holy Angry Judgment and brought havoc and destruction to God's great creation.

And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters (Genesis 1:2).

God's prehistoric worlds were composed of Heaven, with its angelic beings, and Earth, with its particular type of man for each previous world.\* Although God has shrouded the prehistoric creations in a cloak of mystery, He has included enough Light in His Word to give us some insight into those periods of His Creative Work.

The angelic leader in the last prehistoric Heaven was named *Abaddon*\* in the Hebrew and *Apollyon* in the Greek (Revelation 9:11). In addition to being guilty of unbelief in God's Word, those particular prehistoric angelic beings were guilty of the sin of perversion. After corrupting Heaven with their rebellious, sinful practices, these Angels went down to the last prehistoric Earth and seduced prehistoric man into committing the sin of perversion. These men extended their sin of perversion into the animal kingdom so that man cohabited with animals.

This sin in Heaven and in Earth stirred up God's Anger and Judgment, so He cleansed the Heavens by casting out all the offenders. After being cast out of Heaven, Abaddon and the Angels who joined him in sinning against God's Laws of Holiness and Purity were bound in the Bottomless Pit (Jude 1:6; Revelation 9:11). God then cleansed the Earth by dropping it down into a watery grave.

When Jeremiah was under the prophetic anointing that permits a Prophet to look backward in time as well as forward, he spoke of God's Judgment of the last prehistoric world.

**I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was without form** [The Hebrew connotation is that it became without form], and void; and the heavens, and they had no light. I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved lightly. **I beheld, and, lo, there was no man,** and all the birds of the heavens were fled. I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful place was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of the LORD, and by his fierce anger. For thus hath the LORD said, The whole land shall be desolate; **yet will I not make a full end.** For this shall the earth mourn, and the heavens above be black: because I have spoken it, I have purposed it, and will not repent, neither will I turn back from it. The whole city shall flee for the noise of the horsemen and bowmen; they shall go into thickets, and climb up upon the rocks: every city shall be forsaken, and not a man dwell therein (Jeremiah 4:23-29).

Because of the sin that had been committed by His creation, God's fierce Anger rocked the Heavens and the Earth. The Heavens became black, and the Earth entered into a chaotic condition of destruction. Yet, here, in the very midst of sin and judgment, God extended His Mercy as He said, "...yet will I not make a full end" (Jeremiah 4:27). With these words God closed the chapter on the last prehistoric age.

The fact that scientists have determined that the Earth is millions and millions of years old is in complete agreement with God's Word that teaches that the Earth existed during prehistoric ages. During untold millenniums, the last prehistoric Earth was submerged in a watery grave of God's Judgment, for instance. And, this was not God's first creation of a prehistoric world of inhabitants.

Since God's Judgment of the rebellious inhabitants of the prehistoric Earth was complete, there has been no connection or continuation of life from the last prehistoric Earth to our present Earth. We have only the fossil remains of life as it existed then; and we have absolutely nothing left of God's *first* creation of inhabitants on the original Earth. When God judged the sin of prehistoric men, He completely destroyed all earthly life from those ages.

The Creator Who brought the prehistoric creations into being is the same One Who created our present Heavens and Earth. However, He used different substances for His various creations. The angelic realm is made of only celestial substance. Prehistoric man was composed of a degree of terrestrial and celestial substance; he was not created in the Likeness and Image of God as was modern man. Modern man (*Homo sapiens*) was made of three substances: (1) terrestrial, earthly substance; (2) celestial, spiritual substance; (3) and from a spiritual substance that had a capacity to be either mortal or immortal.\*

All flesh is not the same flesh: but **there is one kind of flesh of men**, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds. **There are also celestial bodies, and bodies terrestrial**: but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another (1 Corinthians 15:39,40).

Modern man is *not* the product of an evolution from prehistoric man. The three previous creations were entirely separate from our present creation or world. Prehistoric man had a form of a spirit and soul, but he was not created in the Image and Likeness of God or the Image and Likeness of the Father and the Son. Prehistoric men had such a close connection with the animal world that they were able to cohabit with animals. Their union produced strange mixtures — creatures that were part man and part animal.

God clearly has forbidden this class of union. Many of the wicked spirits loose in the world today are the disembodied spirits of perverted prehistoric creatures. This explains why people sometimes can see demon spirits in the form of an animal or a mixture of animal and man. The satyr, mentioned in Isaiah 34:14, is such a creature. Eventually, Jesus Christ will confine all the wicked spirits from the prehistoric worlds, and those from our present world, in the Lake of Fire, which will burn forever and ever and from generation to generation (Isaiah 34:9,10).

God is faithful to fulfill every every one of His Promises. Because He had promised not to make a full end of the Earth, God brought the Earth up from each of its watery graves of judgment. "And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters" (Genesis 1:2). God started working, again, to establish the present Heavens and the present Earth.

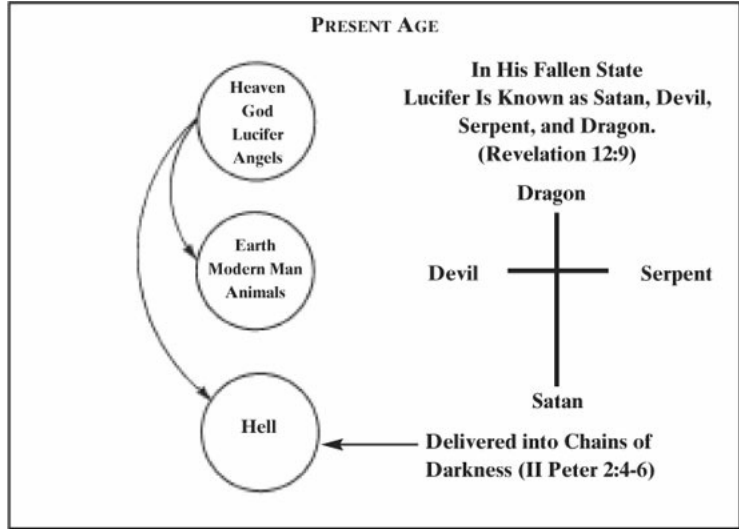
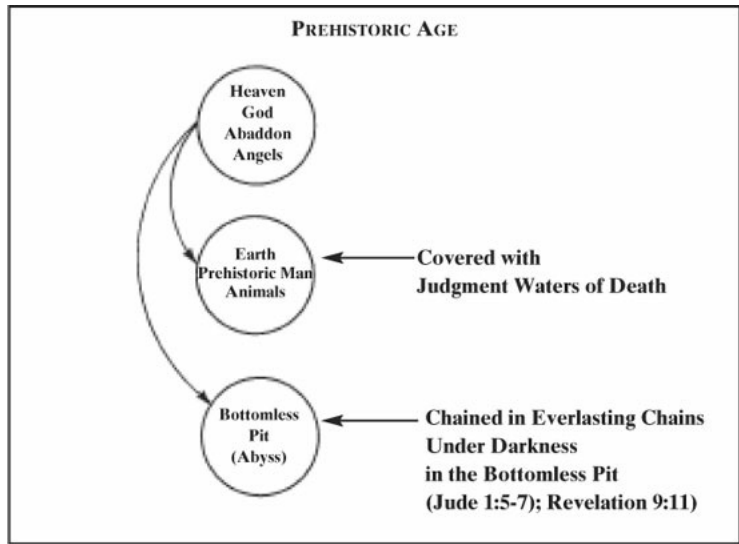
The first chapter of Genesis records the six creative days in which God *restored* and rearranged the *already formed* Earth and brought forth new forms of life on it. He commanded the Light to *reappear*. He divided waters which already existed. He ordered dry land to *reappear* and told the seeds that already were in the Earth to come forth. Out of darkness, He called forth the great celestial lights and established their rule in the night and in the day. Then, God created new life in the animal kingdom, and, lastly, He created man in His own Image.

Just as there is a present Earth, so is there a present Heaven. God did a new Work there also. But, sin again broke out in Heaven. Lucifer, called the Covering Cherub in Ezekiel 28:14, had the ministry of covering God's Holy Mountain on the North Side of Heaven and of covering God's Angelic Bride and the empty place that was left from the last creation which was defiled by Abaddon's sin. Lucifer's intense curiosity caused him to pull back his covering and meddle with the sins in the Pits into which previous creations had been cast. The first creation had been cast into the *Shakhath* Pit for their sins against the LORD's Name. Then, the second creation had been cast into the *Bore* Pit for their sins against the LORD's Name. And, the last prehistoric creation had been cast into the *Tehome* Pit for their sins against the LORD's Name. In addition to picking up Father Wicked, Mother Wickedness, and Abaddon's original sins, Lucifer, the "father of lies" or deceit, became the father of sin in the present Heavens and the perpetrator of sin in the present creation.

The subject of our study in this book is Anger, not the origin of sin. However, it is necessary to lay a foundation of awareness concerning sin because it was through sin that a portion of the Holy Anger from God's Will became corrupted and, finally, joined to the human will. God created all things; hence, He created the prehistoric worlds, and He created our present world. He also created Father Wicked, Mother Wickedness, and Abaddon, the Angels who

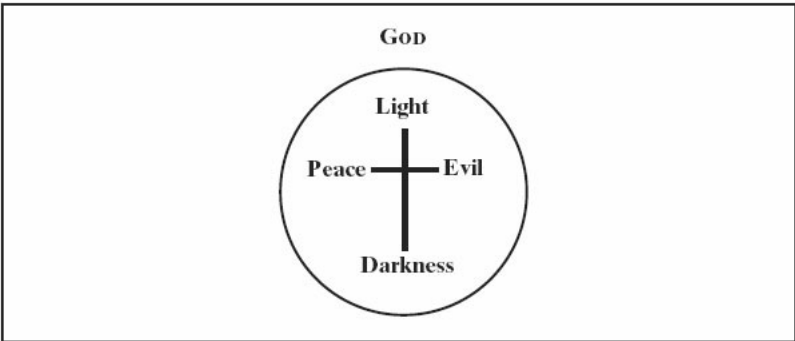
were the originators of sin in the three previous prehistoric worlds, and He created Lucifer, the originator of sin in the present creation or world.

(See drawings on following page.)



As we have probed into the origin of sin, we have seen that Lucifer's rebellion and sin affected Earth as well as Heaven. We also have been made aware of sin in the three prehistoric ages which preceded Lucifer's sin. If we study far enough back in God's Word, looking into Eternity-Past, we finally come to the existence of only God. What was it like before God created the first prehistoric world? Part of the answer is found in the Book of Isaiah.

**I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil:**I the LORD do all these things (Isaiah 45:7).



Now, we are getting back to the beginning of all things. Using the Wheel of His own Being as a pattern, God formed heights and created depths. The word for *form*, in Hebrew, means to squeeze, mold as a potter, to fashion, to frame. God fashioned and formed the Light into a Garment with which He clothes Himself.

Bless the LORD, O my soul. O LORD my God, thou art very great; thou art clothed with honour and majesty. **Who coverest thyself with light as with a garment:** who stretchest out the heavens like a curtain: (Psalm 104:1,2). Who only hath immortality, **dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto;** whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom be honour and power everlasting. Amen (1 Timothy 6:16).

The Book of Daniel declares God's Rulership and Authority over Darkness as well as Light. "He revealeth the deep and secret things: he knoweth what is in the darkness, and the light dwelleth with him" (Daniel 2:22). God knows what is in the Darkness because He created it.

The Hebrew word for *darkness* means misery, destruction, death, ignorance, sorrow, wickedness [not sin], night, obscurity. The Darkness of God relates to the Depths of God and pertains to His Breaking Power. The word *wickedness* means to break and destroy. In that sense, God has "Wickedness" in Him, for without it He could not break and destroy His enemies.

We must not confuse the Darkness and Wickedness that God created with Satan's stolen darkness and wickedness that are mixed with sin. Satan uses his wickedness (breaking and destroying power) to crush us, utterly, apart from the LORD. Since all human beings have inherited Lucifer's sinful will, we have this corrupted power which, instead of being used to break Lucifer's hold on us, is used to break and destroy one another.

The only time God uses His Darkness and Wickedness against mankind is for the purpose of breaking the bondage of sin so that He, in turn, might again build the Image of God in man's heart. God uses His Darkness to break man down and bring him to the foot of the Cross of Jesus Christ. He seeks only to break down a person's will of independence and bring him back into subjection to His Good Purposive Will for all mankind.

We learn in Isaiah, chapter forty-five, verse seven, that God also made (molded, fashioned, framed) Peace. There is no Peace apart from God and His Will in our life. He is the God of Peace. Therefore, He blesses His people with the Peace that He has fashioned, purposed, and planned for them.

The LORD will give strength unto his people; **the LORD will bless his people with peace** (Psalm 29:11).

**...and great shall be the peace of thy children** (Isaiah 54:13).

God is the Creator of opposites. He formed Light and balanced it with Darkness. He made Peace; then, He balanced it by creating Evil. Evil is *not* sin. The word for *evil* in Hebrew means misery, woe, affliction, adversity, calamity, displeasure, distress, sorrow, trouble, wretchedness, or the balance of pleasure and pain. God's Perfect Will would bless us into obedience. However, if we refuse to obey His Will on the blessing route, He is left with no recourse except to deal with us in His Permissive Will, which is the route of chastisement — the route of Evil.

God did not create sin; neither does He tempt man to sin.

Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for **God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth he any man:** But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed (James 1:13,14).

Sin is the transgression of the Law. Since God made all Divine Laws, it is evident that He cannot transgress His own Laws. He is Righteous and Good, and all that He created is like unto Himself — Good. It is ridiculous to think that God would be the Initiator of sin and then chastise, judge, and punish people for something He created. So, then, exactly what was it that Father Wicked, Mother Wickedness, Abaddon, and Lucifer stole from God, perverted, twisted to fit their own diabolical purposes, and brought forth in the monstrous form now called *sin*? They all stole *energy*.

God created *ENERGY* which, simply stated, is vitality of expression, capacity for acting, power forcefully exerted. Energy is vitality; it is action; it is power. We, as well as our whole universe, are made up of energy. There is nothing morally wrong with energy as God created it, but the wrong controller and the wrong usage are what turn good energy into sin. For example, a glowing light bulb, through its harnessed energy, can emit light into a children's nursery or into a degrading brothel. Virtue, or the lack of it, is not with the light itself or with the energy involved. When fallen Lucifer stole some of God's Energy, that energy came under the wrong control, for Lucifer used it for his own sinful and destructive purposes.

***Sin is misused and abused energy.*** Sin is stolen energy that has been twisted, marred, and corrupted into a rebellious, powerful force used to attack God, transgress His Law, and hinder His Purposes.

Energy is not passive; it is a vigorous and aggressive force. We know that the energy of the atom can be harnessed for many uses; and depending on who controls it, atomic power can be used either for beneficial or destructive purposes. Aggressive energy must express itself in one way or another. It can be used for God or against God. It is *sin* when it is used against God.

God's Word declares that we all are sinners.

**...There is none righteous, no, not one:** There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after God. They are all gone out of the way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.... **For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God;** (Romans 3:10-12,23).

We all are guilty of misusing and abusing God's Energy. We all have sinned. The energy which should have been channeled into obedience to God's Will has been pitted against Him. We all, at one time or another, have gone in our own rebellious ways; there is no good thing in our corrupted flesh. Yet, the Word of God which condemns us also opens the door of hope. Through Jesus Christ and His vicarious Death on the Cross, we can have forgiveness of sins, experience God's regeneration, and be brought back into Union with Him. Thanks be unto God for His Unspeakable Gift — Jesus Christ and His Salvation!

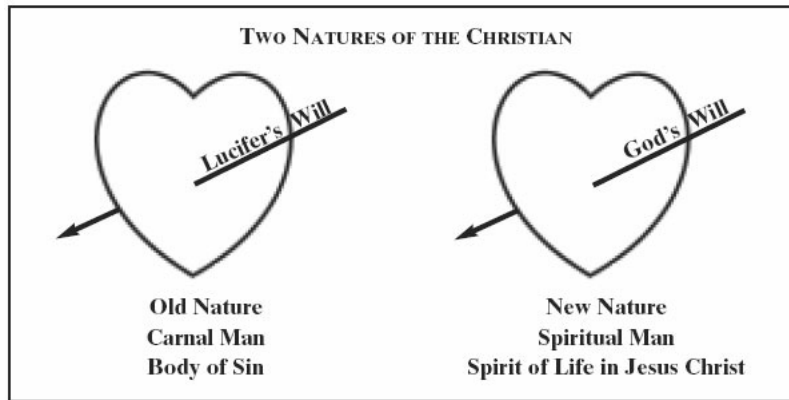
Man has learned to convert energy into more useful forms in the natural realm, but he does not understand about the conversion of corrupted energy in the spiritual realm until he personally walks through the open door of Salvation. Sin is aggressive, corrupt energy which, in a sense, we hand over to God through our repentance and confession of it. God takes it, changes it, and gives it back to us in the form of Holy, Pure, Righteous Energy. Let us see how this is done.

When a sinner accepts Jesus Christ as his personal Saviour, he experiences a new birth. That is, God creates within his old carnal heart a new, spiritual heart which is created in Righteousness and true Holiness (Ephesians 4:24). The substance for this New Heart comes through the process of being conceived and born again through God's Word and Will in Christ Jesus. The sinner repents and confesses his sins to God; then, God changes that confessed, sinful energy into Righteous Energy which He uses to lead the penitent soul to feed upon Christ Jesus and His Words of Truth, causing the New Heart, which bears the Image and Likeness of God, to grow. This New, Born-Again Heart cannot sin because it is born of God (I John 3:9).

We are *not* saying that a *Christian* is sinless; we are saying only that *the New Heart, which is Jesus Christ in the Christian, is sinless.* The very fact that we all continue to struggle against sin, even after we have experienced Salvation, is evidence that the carnal, corrupted human nature is not regenerated, converted, conformed, and transformed all at one time.

The Apostle Paul recognized the conflict between the two natures of the Christian.

(See drawing on following page.)



For I delight in the law of God after the inward man; But I see another law in my members, warring against the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members. O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? I thank God through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then **with the mind I myself serve the law of God; but with the flesh the law of sin** (Romans 7:22-25).

There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. **For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death** (Romans 8:1,2).

Each person has a bottomless ocean of energy that will be expended either under the headship of the world, the flesh, and the Devil, or under the Headship of Jesus Christ. Although believers, struggle with the old, indwelling nature, they no longer are bound to live after the flesh. Christians can convert their sinful nature or energy into the Righteousness of God's Nature or Energy by coming to Jesus Christ and His precious shed Blood. "For he hath made him [Jesus] to be sin for us, who knew no sin; *that we might be made the righteousness of God* in him" (II Corinthians 5:21).

We can take our energy out from under the Satanic headship of fallen Lucifer and have it converted into Righteous Energy simply by placing it back under the Headship of our LORD Jesus Christ. When we repent and confess our sins to the LORD, the shed Blood of Jesus Christ is efficacious in forgiving us and cleansing us of our sins and in starting the converting process. The Blood is the vehicle which carries our confessed sins behind God's Back where they are cast into His Sea of Forgetfulness.

He will turn again, he will have compassion upon us; he will subdue our iniquities; and **thou wilt cast all their sins into the depths of the sea** (Micah 7:19).

Behold, for peace I had great bitterness: but thou hast in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption: for **thou hast cast my sins behind thy back** (Isaiah 38:17).

I, even I, am he that blotteth out thy transgressions for mine own sake, and **will not remember thy sins** (Isaiah 43:25).

The Principle of this Truth was depicted on the Day of Atonement by the two goats used for the sin offering. Aaron, the High Priest, cast lots to determine which goat should be for the LORD and which one should be the scapegoat that would carry the people's confessed iniquities, transgressions, and sins away into the wilderness. The LORD's goat was slain at the Brazen Altar as the sin offering for the people of Israel to make an atonement for them and to repair the broken Torah-Truth, thereby making them one with God.

The scapegoat was presented alive before the LORD. Aaron, the High Priest, laid his hands upon the head of the live goat and, then, confessed all the iniquities, transgressions, and sins of the children of Israel over the goat. After putting all these iniquities, transgressions, and sins upon the head of the scapegoat, he sent it away into the wilderness by the hand of a fit man, and its blood never again returned to Israel's camp.

And Aaron shall lay both his hands upon the head of the live goat, and confess over him all the iniquities of the children of Israel, and all their transgressions in all their sins, putting them upon the head of the goat, and shall send him away by the hand of a fit man into the wilderness: **And the goat shall bear upon him all their iniquities unto a land not inhabited: and he shall let go the goat in the wilderness** (Leviticus 16:21,22).

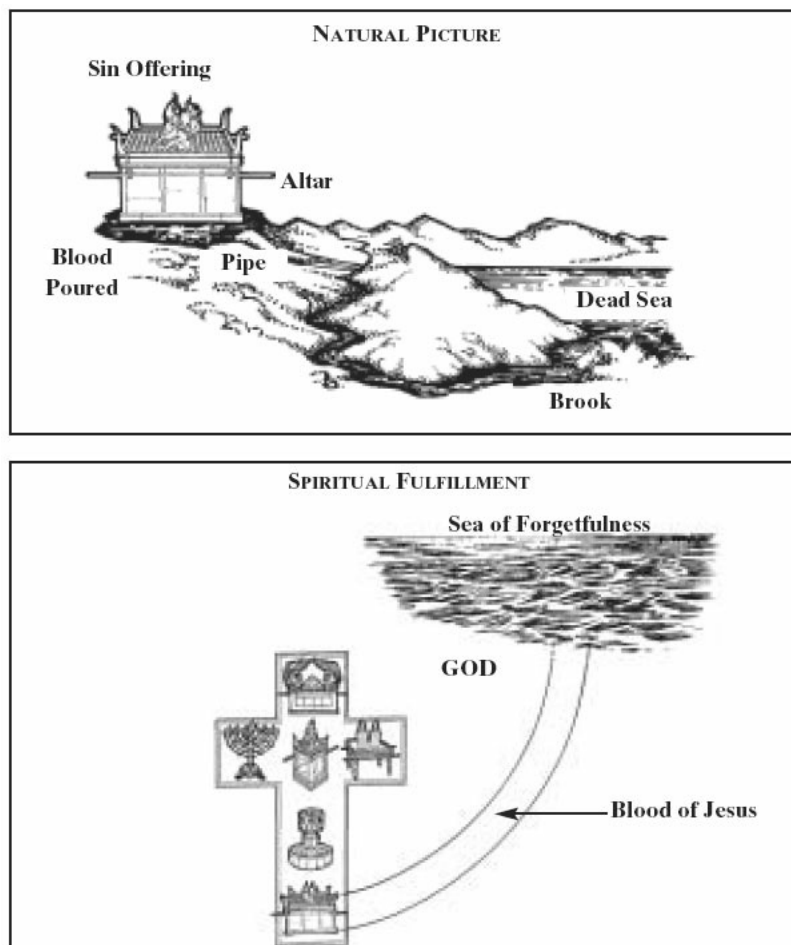
The living blood of the scapegoat, which went into the wilderness and was forgotten, represents the part of Jesus'

Blood sacrifice that went behind God's Back where sins are forgotten, never to be seen again.

As Jesus Christ bled and died on the Cross, His shed Blood was the fulfillment of the two goats on the Day of Atonement. Part of His Blood was carried into Heaven and offered upon the Great Altar, there, to repair God's Torah-Truth that had been broken by sinful man. On Resurrection Day, the Son was on His way to present His Blood Sacrifice to the Father when He paused briefly to minister to Mary as she wept at His empty tomb. On that occasion Jesus would not let Mary touch Him, lest she defile His Holy Offering. "Jesus saith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet ascended to my Father: but go to my brethren, and say unto them, I ascend unto my Father, and your Father; and to my God, and your God" (John 20:17).

Another portion of Jesus' Blood went behind God's Back to create that great Sea of God's Forgetfulness. The living scapegoat represented the Resurrected Blood of Jesus Christ. As the soldier thrust his spear into Jesus' side, Blood and Water flowed forth. The Blood represented Life — Life that was joined to Death, for the Water speaks of the Waters of His Obedient Death.

Looking back again at the animal sacrifices in Jerusalem, we see the blood of the sin offering poured out at the base of the Great Altar. From there, it was piped down to the brook Kidron and carried into the Dead Sea. At the Cross of Calvary, Water and Blood mingled to form a "Dead Sea" in the spiritual realm, or in other words, a Sea of Forgetfulness. How beautifully the natural sacrifices type the spiritual Sacrifice of Jesus Christ.



In the Sea of God's Forgetfulness, God removes Lucifer's headship and places Himself as Head over that confessed, sinful energy. In the Sea behind God's Back, corrupted energy becomes converted energy. It becomes a powerful force that is released to the believer as righteousness by the Eternal Sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

Christians often have a very vague idea of the matter of sin. Those who have not studied God's Word, carefully and prayerfully, usually think that after they have repented and confessed their sins that these sins somehow are

dissolved or simply cast away somewhere as nothing. This class of thinking is wrong, however, because *energy cannot be annihilated; it can only be converted or changed into another form of energy.*

When our confessed sinful energy goes into the Sea behind God's Back, it enters into His great "Converter" in which sin is transformed into Righteous Energy. Then, it is returned to us as Good and Holy Energy which we can use to serve God. Converted energy can be released in prayer, or it can be used to study God's Word, to witness, to praise and worship God, to walk in greater obedience than ever before.

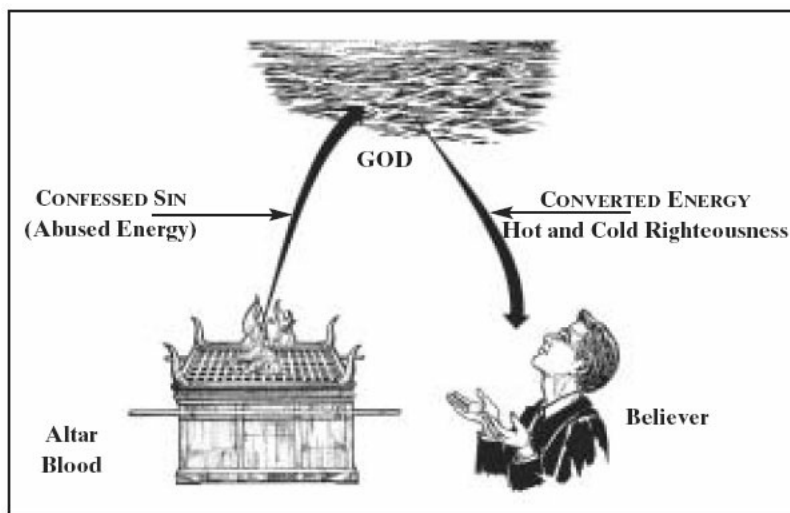
God had the converting process in mind when He spoke the following words:

Come now, and let us reason together, saith the LORD: though *your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow* [cold energy]; *though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool* [hot energy] (Isaiah 1:18).

This invitation was extended to believers, for God was addressing Israel, not the heathen of the day. Our sins are described as being scarlet and crimson, but we have to go to the Hebrew language to discover the spiritual significance of these words.

The word *scarlet* means a crimson thread, a grub worm. The word *crimson* means a maggot. Notice that both words pertain to the lowest of worms. How despicable our sins appear in the Eyes of a Holy, Righteous God! Nevertheless, God invites us to reason together with Him. What is He really telling us here? He is speaking of His great Sin-Converter, His Sea of Forgetfulness of the Living, Resurrected Blood of Jesus Christ. Through the shed Blood of Jesus Christ, Who died as our substitute, our confessed sins can be forgiven, and we can be cleansed from the guilt of them. Christ Jesus' Blood carries sin behind the Back of God to be remembered against us no more, and His Blood converts confessed sinful energy into the Snow-and-Wool Energy of Purity and Righteousness. Every confessed sin comes back to the child of God as a new "Energy Package" that gives him strength to fight against former sins and strength to take new spiritual territory in God. After sinful energy has been through God's Converter, He sees it only as the good, aggressive Energy He originally created.

Christians need Righteous Energy in order to grow in humility and to walk in the humble Footsteps of the Crucified Christ. Converted "Cold Snow" supplies the class of humility Energy needed for this. Christians also need Righteous Energy in order to grow in the exalted place as they fellowship the Resurrected Christ. The converted "Hot Wool" supplies the class of exalted Energy needed for this.



Let us clarify one point. Our confessed sins are not converted the instant we confess them and receive forgiveness. God first permits us to be tested on that sin; He gives us an opportunity to prove to the Devil that we are not going to pick up the same sin again. This is where some people miss it and become apostates.

The sixth chapter of the Book of Hebrews speaks about this class of people. Although they have been greatly blessed by the Mercy and Grace of God, their insincerity is evidenced in that they pick up their former sins and turn their backs on God. These people are apostates because they have had the Light; then, they have deliberately rejected it and turned away from it, choosing to have darkness rather than Light. These people are the ones who

“crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame” (Hebrews 6:6).

There is no provision for the forgiveness of sin other than the Blood of Jesus Christ, and there is no Power whereby man can be drawn back to God other than by His Holy Spirit. Consequently, apostates cannot be renewed or restored to repentance, again, because they have rejected the Son of God and His shed Blood, and they have rejected the Power of God’s Holy Spirit that would draw them to God.

Now let us look at another group of Christians — the ones who are sincere and who stand before God in genuine repentance for their sins. How is it that a sense of guilt can remain after real confession has been made? The lingering awareness of guilt is due to the fact that the process of conversion is not yet finished. We need to understand why God allows the Devil to drag out our sins, theoretically, bringing them to our remembrance before they have been converted into snow and wool. God permits fallen Lucifer to have this liberty so that His Glory might be exalted in a new way and so that we might be tested in our faith concerning the Power of Jesus Christ’s Blood. This process brings more honour to the Blood of Jesus Christ.

In the first place, God proved the Power of Jesus’ Blood when our iniquities, transgressions, and sins were forgiven at the time of our repentance. The living Scapegoat Blood carried these forgiven offenses back behind God’s Back to be converted into Snow and Wool. However, before our sinful energy can be regenerated, converted, conformed, and transformed, our repentance, our confession, and our choice to give up that sin must be tested. The Devil can dangle that sin before us, continuing to accuse us with it. So, it is our turn to prove to the Devil the Power and Glory of the Blood of Jesus Christ. This is our opportunity to witness to the Devil, saying, “I no longer have that sin. It is in the depths of the Sea.”

As believers, we stand in God’s spiritual arena with spectators surrounding us. The literal world around us and also the spirit world, which includes both good Angels and evil Angels and demons, watch us. When the “Accuser of our brethren” comes dragging out our confessed and forgiven sin, it is our privilege and responsibility to contend for the faith. We must take a firm stand and resist the Devil, for our resistance causes the Devil to flee. If we fail to resist, through the confession of our faith in the efficacy of Jesus’ Blood, then the sense of guilt for that sin settles back down upon us.

The Book of Revelation tells how the Angels and the saints always have overcome the Accuser. “And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death” (Revelation 12:11).

This is the pattern for overcoming, as we take our stand in the arena of faith: resist the Devil, testify against him concerning the Power of the Blood, and love not our life unto the death; thus we bring further Glory to the Father and to the Blood of Jesus Christ.

The Devil means to ensnare us, again, in sin and, thus, bring dishonour to the Holy, Resurrected Blood of His only Begotten Son, Jesus Christ, but God uses this process to bring further honour to the Blood. He permits us to be tested so that the Blood might be lifted up and exalted all over again.

Imagine red sins — scarlet and crimson sins — being changed into Snow and Wool. What a miracle! In Eternity, when we look behind the Back of God (through the power of prophetic vision), we will see only the white Snow and Wool in all their glistening beauty of Purity and Righteousness. If the Devil decides to go back there after our confessed sins have been changed and transformed by the Breath of God, he no longer will be able to find those sins. All he will see of our once-corrupted, sinful energy will be a beautiful stature of Righteous Energy. Eternity will ring with praises for the Blood which wrought such miraculous conversions. Yet, we need not wait until Eternity to start magnifying the Blood for the Righteousness that is being worked in our heart daily.

As we progress in our study, let us bear in mind that Energy is an aggressive Force which has power to create or to destroy. It can be used for sinful purposes, or it can become Righteousness. There is no way to destroy the Energy itself. It has to go somewhere. It must be expressed one way or another. The choice is ours as to whether the Energy which God has granted to us remains misused, abused energy or whether it gets put into the Sea behind God’s Back so that it becomes Converted, Pure, Righteous Energy.

---

\* B. R. Hicks, *The Missing Link Between The Genesis Creation And Scientific Findings* (Jeffersonville, Indiana: Christ Gospel Churches Int'l, Inc., 1988).

\* B. R. Hicks, *Revelation Book Two, Jesus Christ the Slain Lamb* (Jeffersonville, Indiana: Christ Gospel Churches Int'l, Inc., 1973), pp. 201-205.

\* B. R. Hicks, *Confirming Our Faith In The Bible's Teachings About Mankind* (Jeffersonville, Indiana: Christ Gospel Churches Int'l, Inc., 1980), pp. 25-38.

# Chapter Three

## Dependence And Independence

The LORD God Himself was the first horticulturist, for He was the first ever to plant a Garden. No other gardener has ever had such love and concern for his plants as God had for the Garden He planted eastward in Eden. No other gardener ever has taken such pains with his tender plantings as the LORD God took with His Garden. He was so careful because He had a far-reaching Plan in mind when He placed the newly created Adam-male and Adam-female in the Garden of Eden. He desired that man grow until he had attained the maturity in God that would have enabled him to share the spiritual Substance of the Garden with the world.

If man had obeyed God's Commandments concerning the order in which the Food from the Trees was to be eaten in the Garden, he would have learned the lessons of dependence and independence that God intended for him to learn, and he would have been in the position to have been made the hub of the nations of the wheel of the world.

God's Word shows what God did to prepare the way for man's life in the Garden and how He planned for man to learn the lessons of dependence and independence.

And the LORD God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. And **the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden;** and there he put the man whom he had formed. **And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil. And a river went out of Eden to water the garden;** and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads (Genesis 2:7-10).

The Hebrew word for *planted* means to fasten, to strike in, to fix. The Garden of Eden was a Paradise because the LORD God was there in His Personal Presence. He personally prepared the ground of the Garden with His own two Hands and fastened each Living Tree exactly where it would grow the best and be the most fruitful and the most beautiful. He planted Trees that were pleasant to the sight to meet the needs of man's soul. He planted Trees which were good for food to meet the needs of the particular type of body that man possessed before he sinned. At this point, man lived in a state between mortality and immortality. He was neither mortal nor immortal. He did not get his mortal body until he ate of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.

In the very midst of the Garden, God planted two special Trees for the satisfaction of man's spirit: the Tree of Life and the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. The Tree of Life was Jesus, God's only Begotten Son, in Spirit and Soul Form before His incarnation. The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil was Christ, the Word of God. Although these two Trees dwelled together in a unified form as far as God was concerned, they were separated as far as man was concerned. This separation is apparent in the instructions given to Adam in regard to the eating order in the Garden.

And the LORD God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, **Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it:** for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die (Genesis 2:15-17).

When speaking of the Trees in the midst of the Garden, the LORD God made a clear distinction between the Tree of Life and the Tree of Knowledge. In Genesis, chapter two, verse nine, He said these words: "the tree of life... *and* the tree of knowledge." Genesis, chapter three, verse twenty-two, shows plainly that man did not partake of the Fruit of the Tree of Life when he ate of the Fruit of the Tree of Knowledge outside of the ordained Will of God.

The Tree of Knowledge was *not* a Tree of sin; God never planted sin. Neither was it a Tree of Death in its original state. It became a Tree of Death to Adam-male and Adam-female because they stole and ate the Knowledge of Good and Evil prematurely.

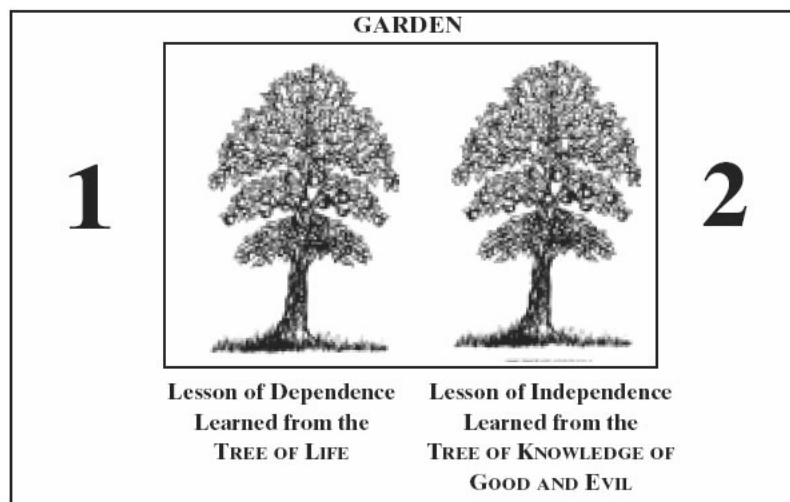
We see the demonstration of the Principle of a Holy Thing being the instrument of death when the Ark was being

returned to Jerusalem. Uzzah put forth his sinful hand to steady the Ark and was slain by the invisible Cherubims that were joined to the visible Cherubims on the Ark. The living Cherubims on Jehovah's War Chariot overshadowed the golden Cherubims on the visible Ark, and it was their responsibility to guard God's Righteousness and Holiness. The living Cherubims war against sin by killing all who would approach without a covering of blood.

The Ark, with its visible and invisible Cherubims, searched out Israel's resting place, leading them through the wilderness and giving them life and victory. Yet, this same Ark became the Ark of Death when it was touched presumptuously, out of the Will of God. This was also true with the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil; it became a Tree of Death when it was touched out of God's Will.

God knows Good and Evil; He created them both. But, Evil is not sin. The word *good* means pleasure, and the word *evil* means pain. The Tree of Knowledge, then, was a Tree of Pleasure and Pain. That is why it was so vital for Adam-male and Adam-female to partake of this Tree in the right order. They were to eat of the Tree of Life *first* in order to have the foundational balancing rod needed to support pleasure and pain without losing their equilibrium.

The basic Principle which God sought to teach Adam-male and Adam-female through their eating of the Tree of Life was complete and total dependence upon Him for Life. Without the Dependency Principle, they never could handle the Knowledge of Good and Evil. If they had learned God's Dependent Will, they would have been ready to learn the Independent Position of His Will and could have safely eaten of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.



We have learned that God's Perfect, Unbegotten Will is made up of three aspects or functions: (1) the Will of Redemptive Understanding; (2) the Will of Revelation Wisdom; and (3) the Will of Satisfaction Knowledge. We must experience each phase of God's Will in the proper order if we want to grow spiritually.

God offered Adam-male and Adam-female (He called them both "Adam" Genesis 5:2) His Will of Redemptive Understanding first; He commanded them to eat freely of the Trees which were good for food and pleasant to the eyes. They were to find Eternal Life by following the pathway to the Tree of Life. So, God commanded them not to eat of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.

Instead of accepting God's Will of Redemptive Understanding, Adam-female chose to receive the Serpent's will of perverted pride. Her acceptance of the Serpent's revelation concerning the Tree of Knowledge was a witness of her rejection of God's Revelation of the Tree. God had given His Will of Revelation Wisdom to Adam-male when He had said, "...for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die." The Serpent's revelation was this: "Ye shall *not* surely die."

When the Serpent led Adam-male and Adam-female to the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, he established their independence from God. Instead of learning dependence upon God for their lives and, then, coming to the independent position, they by-passed the dependency God sought to teach them. Their eating of the forbidden Tree was their declaration of independence from God. The end result was that they never came to dependence, and they actually lost their independence as well. They lost in every aspect.

When God placed Adam-male and Adam-female in the Garden, he made them rulers over the entire animal

kingdom, giving them dominion “over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth.” They were commanded to be fruitful, multiply, replenish the Earth, and subdue it. God committed to mankind the power to understand and talk with the creation. Adam named (or gave natures to) all the animals. Then, because of sin, he lost the power to rule over them.

Adam’s wrong choice is the reason the world is in the state it is in today.

Wherefore, **as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin;** and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned: (Romans 5:12).

Therefore **as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation;** even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man’s disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound: That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord (Roman 5:18-21).

Adam’s will, which became depraved and perverted by the Serpentine will of fallen Lucifer, was passed on to his posterity. As sons of Adam the First, we come into this world as sinners (Psalm 51:5). We are born with a nature that is inclined toward sin (Psalm 58:3), and we possess a corrupted will of perverted independence toward God. Just as our first parents sought after knowledge, the people of the world today continue to look for knowledge.

God is not opposed to knowledge — He is the Author of all Knowledge. However, God knows the necessity of our first learning dependence upon Him for our life. When He sees that we have learned the Dependency Principle, He will follow it with the Knowledge that brings us to the independent position. Had Adam the First heard God and eaten in the right order, he would have learned dependence on God for all that pertained to Eternal Life, and he would have avoided the pain and heartache that came through sin.

If learning the Principle of Dependence and Independence was necessary to Adam the First, it is equally important to us today. Our troubles would be solved if we would learn to eat of Jesus, the Tree of Life, first. Only when we have learned dependence are we ready for the lesson of independence which is learned at the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.

Jesus had to learn the Principle of Dependence and Independence when He came to this Earth in a Body of flesh. He walked the same route as did Adam the First, only Jesus walked it in obedience and victory. Where Adam made the wrong choice, Jesus made the right one.

Jesus’ utter dependency on His Father for Life was revealed in the Garden of Gethsemane. He was dying there, literally disintegrating; and with the disintegration, His whole spiritual dream was dissolving. He had been ordained, in Eternity-Past, in the Counsel of God, to go to the Cross and die for the sins of the human race. But, in Gethsemane, He was dying, dying short of His Goal and dying short of the Cross. Although He had Power at His disposal to call legions of Angels to strengthen His own dying Body, Jesus manifested no evidence of independence. Instead, He clung in utter dependence to the Will of His Father, allowing His Father to be the Divine Decider of whether His human Life was to be sustained and strengthened. He was willing to die there in the Garden, if His Father had changed His Plan, Purpose, and Will for Him.

Jesus had healed the sick, controlled the elements of nature, multiplied bread and fishes, and raised the dead. Why did He lie dying in such apparent helplessness? It was because of His total dependence on the Will of God. He reasoned, “I would rather die here depending upon My Father for the Tree of Life than to stand up in independence and separate Myself from My Father’s Plan, Purpose, and Will.” Jesus would not use His Power to heal Himself without the permission of His Father. After Jesus had displayed His perfect Dependence upon His Father for His Life, His Father sent an Angel from Heaven to strengthen Him. Surely, Jesus’ experience in the Garden of Gethsemane was a perfect example of total Dependent Obedience to God for His Life, which also brings a triumphant victory over the independence of our human will!

As God’s ministers, we experience similar Gethsemane situations. When God’s anointing is on us, we can pray for the sick and afflicted and see them delivered by the Power of God, according to His Purposive Will. This is when God stands us on the independent side, ministering out of the knowledge of His Purposive Will that He has given us. Then, God brings us to the dependent side of His Will, to the prostrate position. On this side, instead of feeling powerful and strong, as we did when we helped others, we seemingly feel incapable of lifting even one finger to aid ourself. We lie in weakness, suffering other people’s thoughts and words of accusations, which say, “He prays for others, and they are healed, so why can’t he pray for himself and be healed? If he has so much spiritual Stature and power, why does he lie there sick? Why doesn’t he *do* something?” Once we understand God’s Principle of

Dependence and Independence, we do not struggle nor feel condemned, regardless of what others say or think.

When the Father beheld the Son's utter dependence on Him for Life, He sent an Angel to minister Life to Jesus so that He could finish His earthly race and make it all the way up to the Cross.

On the Cross, Jesus exhibited more dependence. The spiritual leaders mocked Him as He hung on the tree, saying, "He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ, the chosen of God." In other words, "Jesus, if You are Who You say You are, come down from the Cross. Save Yourself." The two thieves, hanging, one on His right side and one on His left side, mocked in the same fashion (Mark 15:32).

Seemingly, Calvary presented Jesus with a tremendous opportunity to do a great miracle before all His enemies. Surely, if He had come down off the Cross, people would have believed in Him. But, such counsel comes from the darkened understanding of the human mind. He could not have redeemed anyone by choosing to walk independently in direct disobedience to God's Purposive Will. On the Cross, Jesus manifested that He had learned well the lesson of dependence. He knew how to rest in complete subjection and dependence on the Will of God for His very Life.

Jesus' Death demanded further dependence on God. Although He said, "I lay my life down that I might take it again" (John 10:17), He did not resurrect Himself from the dead. After Jesus had been three days and nights in Death and Hell, the Father raised His Spirit and Soul from Death and Hell and His Body from the Grave, by His Unbegotten Glory and Power (Romans 6:4). Then, the Resurrected Jesus raised up His Sacrificial-Blood Life or took up His Blood-Life, again, after His Father had rescued Him from Death, Hell, and the Grave.

Jesus could not get up by Himself because that would have destroyed the Dependent Principle — the Son's dependent obedience to the Father. If Jesus Christ, as the Second Adam, had been disobedient to the Dependent Principle, there would have been no Salvation for us from Death and Hell nor the privilege to walk victoriously in Him in this present life. However, Jesus did walk in complete obedience and in total dependence on the Father; therefore, we can do likewise.

The eighteenth Psalm and the twenty-second chapter of Second Samuel are prophetic revelations of Jesus' experience in Death and Hell. They both tell of when the Son lifted up His Voice and cried out to His Father for deliverance.

The sorrows of hell compassed me about; the snares of death prevented me: **In my distress I called upon the LORD, and cried to my God: and he did hear my voice out of his temple, and my cry did enter into his ears** (II Samuel 22:6,7).

The prophetic account goes on to tell about the Father riding out of Heaven on a Cherub to rescue His Son. "He sent from above, he took me, he drew me out of many waters. He delivered me from my strong enemy,..." (Psalm 18:16,17). The Father Himself brought up His Son, Jesus, out of Death and Hell, causing Him to stand up in the Father's Resurrected, Unbegotten Life. Thus, we see that the Son's dependence route led to the Father's Tree of Unbegotten Life. By walking the dependence route, the man Jesus became eternally joined in His Spirit, Soul, and Body to both the Lord and Christ (Acts 2:36).

Jesus came out of Death as the LORD Jesus Christ. He came out with the Father's Unbegotten Glory and Power that belong to the independent position. He now is joined eternally to the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil — joined to the Lord of Glory and the Christ of Power, the Word. Jesus sent word to His Disciples that He had risen from the dead and would meet them over in Galilee. When they met together there, He declared to them, "All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth" (Matthew 28:18). Thus, He told them that He had been made independent; His Father had given Him all Power.

It is erroneous to think that there is no power connected with the dependent position. Certainly Jesus came into the world with Power. He was conceived when the Power of the Highest overshadowed the Virgin Mary. He had Power to say and do all that He heard and saw His Father saying and doing. He spoke the Word of Truth, causing withered arms to straighten out and be completely healed. He stopped an issue of blood which no physician could heal. He opened blind eyes. He caused cripples to walk. He unstopped deaf ears. He bound demons and cast them out. So, Jesus definitely had Power on the dependent side of God's Purposive Will. Jesus had fantastic Divine Power. Yet, He never exercised His Power independently of His Father's Holy Will; He did only the Works commanded by the Father.

God cannot trust us with the independence of His Holy Will until we have been totally educated in the dependence of His Holy Will. Since God's Son, Who never sinned, had to learn and to walk this dependent route first, it seems only reasonable that we must learn the same Principle in the same order that Jesus did. We generally are much too eager to rush out and do exploits for God. I am so thankful that God did not turn me loose with His

Bride's Message ahead of time or out of season. The fact that He spent so much time teaching me to be completely dependent on Him for all my life has been my salvation.

After our dependence on the Tree of Life is established in a secure Oneness of Relationship with Jesus, God can say, "You are trustworthy now. I will give you My independence. I can trust you with the Knowledge of Good and Evil. I can trust you with pleasure and pain without your becoming unbalanced."

If our human wills already were married totally to God's Holy Purposive Will, we could see just as God sees. Hence, whatever we saw the LORD doing, we also would do exactly as He does. The fact that our thoughts, feelings, and actions frequently bring dishonour rather than Glory to the LORD is evidence that there still is room for our spiritual growth in the horizontal dependent position of Jesus.

Adam-male and Adam-female hindered God's Master Plan and Purposive Will when they accepted fallen Lucifer's perverted will by eating of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil; therefore, they stood up in sinful independence from God and His Plan and Will. God's Will was to lead them first to the Tree of Life (Jesus) and later to the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil (Christ the Word).

The whole human race has been in trouble ever since our first parents reversed the order of eating in the Garden and ate of the Pleasure and Pain of the Tree of Knowledge first. For example, the troubles people have at their place of employment usually can be traced back to the fact that they do not know when to be dependent and when to be independent. They have God's Divine Order reversed most of the time. The troubles in homes and even the troubles in God's House with God's children come because people do not know when to work in dependence and when to work in independence, according to God's Master Plan and Purposive Will. They cannot see clearly. Their vision has been darkened by sin since the Garden of Eden. Blindness and confusion are the lot of fallen man.

This blindness and confusion begins working from the beginning of every life. For most people, blindness and confusion occur when they are forced to face the Reality Principle of Life — the Principle that there is pain as well as pleasure in our earthly life from Adam the First.

A newborn infant enters the world on the pleasure side. He knows a warm, intimate relationship while nursing at his mother's breasts. If pain happens to enter his world, in the form of a wet diaper or a hungry stomach, he screams loudly, and mother comes quickly to remove the pain from his world. He has mother's constant, loving care and attendance to his every need and wish during his first few months. Then comes the time that he must face reality if he is to develop beyond the infant stage of growth. This is when mother sits Baby in a high chair for his feedings.

Suddenly, instead of mother's warm arms, he feels the cold, unyielding arms of the high chair. Instead of mother's soft breasts, he holds a hard glass and an even harder spoon. Instead of mother's delicious milk, he is offered strange-tasting vegetables. The familiar pleasures of his world seem to vanish, swallowed up by pain. Right then, Baby has to make a choice either to accept the Reality Principle or reject it.

Every child rebels at this point, in one measure or another. We all have inherited a corrupted human will that just naturally refuses to accept the reality that we must experience the hard, painful things of life in the process of growing up.

Baby's rejection of reality is manifested as he throws his glass on the floor and drops his spoon. He cries. He fusses. He refuses everything his mother offers him. He wants the old way of feeding because, according to him, the old way is much better.

Later, after Baby starts holding his spoon, his mother may need to give him added help. This is when he usually pitches another fit because, now, he wants to be *entirely* independent. He wants to feed himself or clothe himself or walk without assistance. All his resistance stems from his blindness and confusion of the Principle of Dependence and Independence.

Only Jesus Christ can heal a person's blindness and confusion, putting the Dependent and Independent Principle in the right order. If this Principle could be learned by gift, everyone who knows Jesus Christ automatically would know when to be dependent and when to exercise independence. Even casual observation reveals that most Christians, along with the rest of the world, live with their hands crossed. They are independent when they should be dependent and dependent when they should be independent. Their problem has been inherited from Adam the First; therefore, it started in their childhood and continues all their life, apart from the LORD Jesus Christ.

The straightening or the unmixing process of the Independent and Dependent Principle begins with Jesus Christ. The wrong order is changed to the right order only when a person, through a voluntary act of his conscious will, invites the LORD to make this change.

When we learn to walk in the LORD's Purposive Will, there will be His Holy Balance between dependence and independence. Then, we will have great peace, satisfaction, and joy within. The problems and situations of life harass us because we have not yet learned the LORD's basic Principle of Dependence and Independence from Him for both our natural life and our spiritual life. Not only does God desire to teach us this Principle, but He also has given us remarkable discernment and enlightenment, enabling us to see which side of the Scales we should walk on. We shall learn more about these eyes of insight further in our study.

# Chapter Four

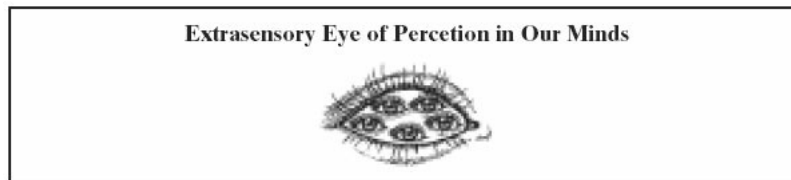
## Man's Extrasensory Sight

Some people have extrasensory perception, which is the ability to see outside the realm of the senses, apart from normal sense perception. Hence, they are able to see visions and are gifted with inspiration and abilities which supersede the natural realm. Very often these people are not Christians. We realize that it is normal for Christians to have supernatural experiences which relate to Divine Inspiration and the Gifts of the Spirit of God. However, we are not speaking of this realm of revelation right now. We must recognize that the human race as a whole possesses a God-given extrasensory perception or a sixth sense.

God created man in His own Image and Likeness, giving him five basic perception senses in his body, soul, and spirit. Our senses of sight, taste, smell, hearing, and touch are clearly evident. Less easily discerned are the invisible "eyes" of perception that God has given us. These invisible eyes pertain to our extrasensory perception, given to us by God Who has many Omniscient, Omnipresent Eyes.

For **the eyes of the LORD run to and fro through at the whole earth**, to shew himself strong in the behalf of them whose heart is perfect toward him.... (II Chronicles 16:9).

Since we are created in the Likeness of God Who has many Eyes, we also must have many eyes of perception. Extrasensory perception involves more than the obvious eyes in our physical body. Our extra sense is an *extra eye* which has millions of little eyes, as it were, within it.



These little eyes move out through all our senses and come together as one in our minds. There is in each of us a sense of perception which flows through our many senses and minds within. This sense of perception is an awareness that allows us to take hold of, feel, comprehend, grasp mentally, take note of, recognize, observe, and discern things around us.

A relatively few exceptional people have developed these eyes and have put them to their best use. Whether we have developed these perceptive eyes or not, we all possess extrasensory eyes; therefore, we need to become more aware of their existence and put them to the best use for Christ's Sake and for our own sake. As our perceptive understanding grows, we will understand ourselves better and get a clearer picture of how our senses function.

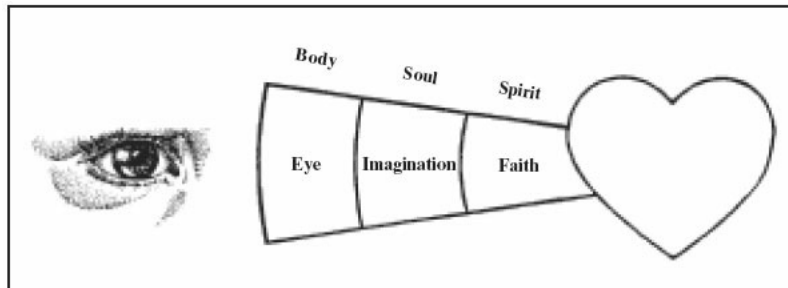
We can learn much about our extrasensory, perceptive sense by studying what happened in the Garden of Eden. We know that the outer eyes of Adam-male and Adam-female were functioning because God called their attention to the Trees of the Garden, especially the Tree of Life. He desired that they see and perceive that their Eternal Life and Eternal Privilege to remain in the Garden or Paradise particularly relied on their total dependence upon the Tree of Life. Had Adam-male and Adam-female learned this total dependence on God for their very life, God would have taken them to the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil and introduced them to independence in His Divine Order.

Fallen Lucifer came into the Garden in his Serpent-form, deceitfully saying, in so many words, "You should establish your independence from the Tree of Life. There is no need to be so dependent on God for your life since you already have life. In fact, you both can be like 'gods of life' yourselves."

The Serpent knew about the many perceptive eyes which God had placed down in man's will. Lucifer knew, also, that the flow of Light and Life or Death and Darkness in the midst of man's will depended on whose words man would choose — his or God's. If God's Governing *Torah*-Truth flowed in man's will, the eyes of his will would be filled with Light and Eternal Life. If Lucifer's serpentine lies flowed in man's will, the eyes in his will would be filled with Darkness and Death.

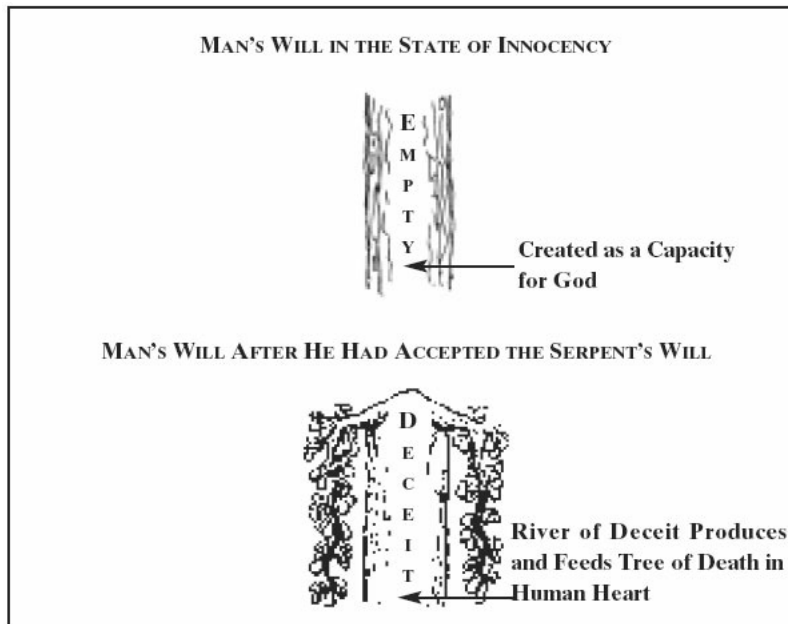
Adam-male and Adam-female already had received a portion of sight from God which allowed them to see in the

body-realm, the soul-realm, and the spirit-realm. In addition to the eyesight of their bodies, they each had an eye in their souls (imagination) and each had an eye in their spirits (faith). God commanded them to look upon the Trees of Life and Knowledge because He knew the eyes of their bodies, the eyes of their souls, and the eyes of their spirits were functioning. Therefore, He gave them an opportunity to use their gift of sight to worship and to obey Him. The LORD rightfully expected man's worship and obedience. Thus, they would have made way for Light and Life to flow in the midst of their wills. Had the gift of sight not been operative in them, God would not have expected their dependence and obedience to His Command and their worship to Him.



The Serpent's motive in the Garden was to gain entrance into man's will. He knew that if he could fill man's will with Darkness and Death, he could rule and reign over the whole wheel of man — his body, soul, and spirit. Therefore, he caused Adam-female to use the eyes in her body, her soul, and her spirit to desire to accept the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil out of season and to reject the Tree of Life. The test in the Garden of Eden was who would be man's governor and guide — God or fallen Lucifer. The warfare centered on the possession of man's will. The battle was over whose will this innocent, newly created human being would accept as the governing and guiding shaft of his being. Man's will cannot stand alone, for God created the inside of the human will to be joined to the will of another. God's Master Plan and Purposive Will was for man's will to know Union with His own Holy Purposive Will. God gave Adam the First a free moral choice, which he could use to accept God's Purposive Will and eat of the Tree of Life which, then, would allow the Light and Life of the *Torah*-Truth to flow down the middle of his will, or he could use his free moral choice to accept the corrupt Darkness and perverted Death of the will of fallen Lucifer to govern and guide the wheel of his being. Man made the wrong choice. Therefore, man has a union between his will and the will of fallen Lucifer, the Serpent. Now, fallen man, like Lucifer, has Deceit, Darkness, and Death flowing up and down in the middle of his will, so his Luciferic will controls the wheel of his being.

(See drawing on following page.)



God offered Adam-male and Adam-female His Redemptive Will when He set the Tree of Life before them, urging them to eat freely of it. God's Will would have been a living River of Truth in them if they had received it. Their human will, with its millions of eyes, would have been opened and filled with God's Light and Life. When God gave Adam-male the Commandment and its accompanying warning, He was offering man His Will of Redemptive Understanding.

And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, **Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it:** for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die (Genesis 2:16,17).

God sought to teach our first parents the acceptance of His Redemptive Will, coming to them in His Humility Light of dependence on Him, which would have filled the eyes of their wills with burning and shining Light of Understanding. Then, He would have taken them to the Tree of Knowledge on the independent side with its Exalted Light, Life, and Glory.

Instead of accepting God's Redemptive Will, Adam-male and Adam-female chose to receive the perverted will of fallen Lucifer. Because he is the "father of lies," his will flowed in them as a great River of Deceit. Consequently, mankind's understanding has been full of Deceit, Darkness, and Death ever since.

In direct contradiction to God's Revelation, the Serpent said, "Ye shall *not* surely die." Adam-female spurned God's Will and, instead, invited the Serpent's will to move into the middle of her will as her governor and guide. After the union had been made, through Adam-female's obedience to the Serpent's will, she walked over to the forbidden Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil and ate of its Fruit. Then, she gave to Adam-male, and he also ate of the forbidden Tree. Consequently, their eyes were opened in their wills, but their eyes of spiritual sight were closed to God's Truth, Light, and Life.

And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.... **And the eyes of them both were opened,** and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons (Genesis 3:4,7).

The eyes of their wills truly were opened; however, instead of being filled with God's Light and Life of Understanding, they were filled with Lucifer's Deceit, Darkness, and Death. They were void of true spiritual understanding.

When speaking of heathen Gentiles, who walked in the vanity of their own sin-darkened minds, the Apostle Paul described them in the following manner: "Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart:" (Ephesians 4:18). Because he was

aware of the extrasensory eyes of perception in the will, Paul prayed for the Christians that these eyes would be enlightened. The word *enlightened* means to shed rays, to shine, to brighten up, to illuminate, bring light, make to see.

Wherefore I also, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jesus, and love unto all the saints, Cease not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers; That the God of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Father of glory, may give unto you the spirit of wisdom and revelation in the knowledge of him: **The eyes of your understanding being enlightened;** that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the saints, (Ephesians 1:15-18).

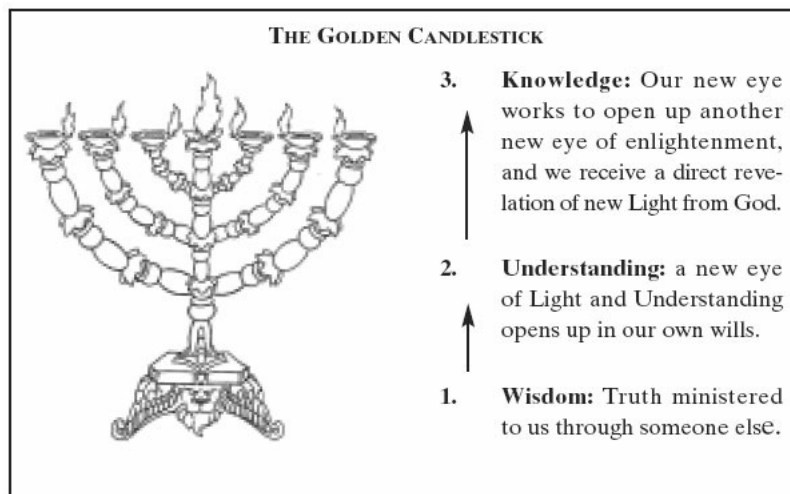
This is true Knowledge. This is the class of Knowledge that God had wanted in the first place for mankind, who was God's highest form of created life. He wanted them to know a Union and a Oneness of Relationship with Him through the joining of their wills with His Will.

The True Light of Knowledge, whether it be on the humility side or the exalted side, comes only through God's Enlighten-ment, for man's will is enshrouded with the darkness of sin through its union with the sinful will of fallen Lucifer.

In its type and shadow form in the Old Testament Tabernacle, True Light (representing Jesus Christ) is found at the Golden Candlestick in the Holy Place. This Pure, Divine Light has three aspects: Wisdom, Understanding, and Knowledge. All Light begins with the Wisdom of Humility and is crowned, in its highest form, with Knowledge.

How do the Lights of Wisdom, Understanding, and Knowledge differ from each other? For example, when you are brought a message of Revealed Truth from the Word of God, the minister of this Truth is handing you a package of God's Wisdom, which is Light for which you, personally, have not worked. Someone else has fasted, prayed, and waited on God for this class of Truth; thus, you receive it as a gift. However, in this particular process, enlightenment has just begun. You must take the bit of Wisdom you have received and pray over it until the Spirit of God enlightens your own understanding with this Truth. Only when this sequence of events happens do your inner eyes open to truly see the Light, making it yours personally. Wisdom, then, becomes your own in your understanding. Each time you pray over the Truth, a new eye opens up, and your will becomes more enlightened concerning God's Master Plan and Purposive Will. The Light of Understanding then is in a position to influence, to govern, and to guide your will.

When the theoretical Principle of Truth moves from your mind, which is where you first receive the Light of Wisdom, and enters into the realm of your will, it becomes a powerful Governing and Guiding Force to make you a *doer* of God's Word. At this point, the Principle of Truth which has been received and understood becomes yours by Stature or growth, rather than by Gift. As you continue to use this new eye of Understanding Light in your independent study of the Word of God, it suddenly causes another eye to open. This other eye of new illumination stands before you as a new area of inspired Revelation of Knowledge from God. This time, the Light of Truth came to you directly from God — not through a human vessel.



The continual unfolding of new Light through the opening of new eyes is what makes the study of God's Word

so exciting. The reason God's people shun the prayer closet and a private time in studying God's Word is because they never experience the thrill of receiving new Light through new eyes of Light. If we remain alone in the spiritual dark when we study and pray, it becomes a boring experience. Conversely, it is *exciting* to be shut in with God and His Light of Truth and Understanding. Once believers' inner eyes of Light are opened in their wills, they can hardly wait to get alone with God. As more eyes of Wisdom and Understanding are opened, more eyes of Knowledge are opened; hence, the Light grows greater and greater. As the Psalmist declared: "For with thee is the fountain of life: in thy light shall we see light" (Psalm 36:9). This always was and is God's Divine Order, both in the Garden of Eden and now. If we go to the Tree of Life, we will receive the Light of Wisdom and Understanding which, in turn, leads us to the Light of Knowledge.

The Book of Ezekiel gives another interesting reference to the extrasensory eyes of perception which God Himself possesses and which He has placed in the angelic world as well as in the will of man.

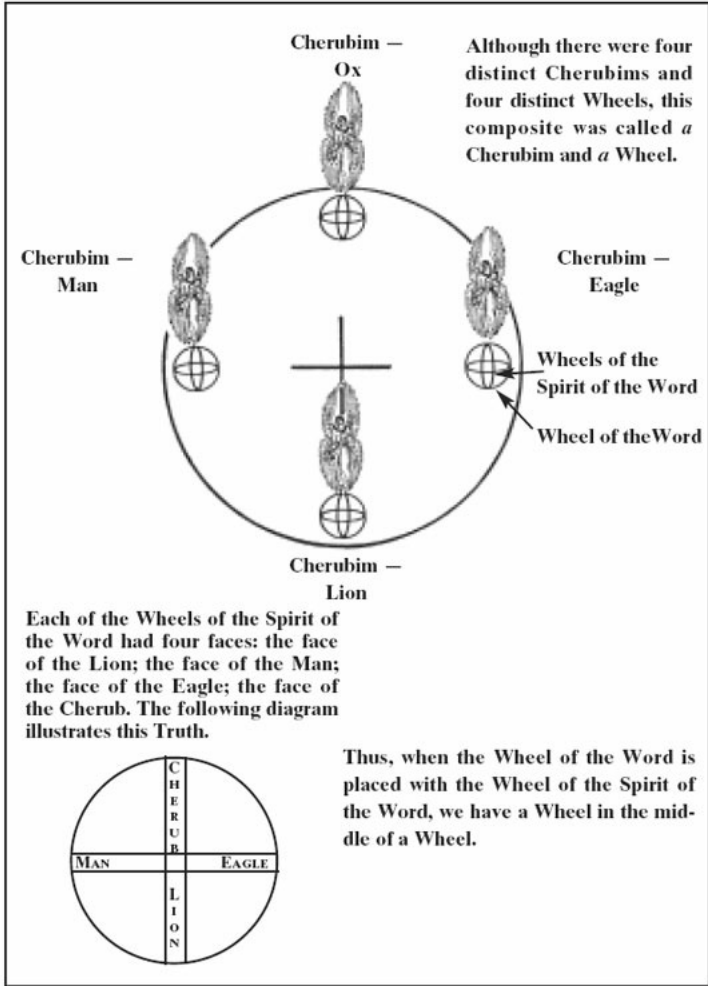
And it came to pass, that when he had commanded the man clothed with linen, saying, Take fire from between the wheels, from between the cherubims; then he went in, and stood beside the wheels. And one cherub stretched forth his hand from between the cherubims unto the fire that was between the cherubims, and took thereof, and put it into the hands of him that was clothed with linen: who took it, and went out. And there appeared in the cherubims the form of a man's hand under their wings. And when I looked, behold the four wheels by the cherubims, one wheel by one cherub, and another wheel by another cherub: and the appearance of the wheels was as the colour of a beryl stone. And as for their appearances, they four had one likeness, as if a wheel had been in the midst of a wheel. When they went, they went upon their four sides; they turned not as they went, but to the place whither the head looked they followed it; they turned not as they went. And their **whole body, and their backs, and their hands, and their wings, and the wheels, were full of eyes round about**, even the wheels that they four had (Ezekiel 10:6-12).

In order to understand the significance of this portion of Scripture, it is necessary to include some verses from the first chapter of Ezekiel, which give a revelation of the LORD's War Chariot as it comes out of Heaven.

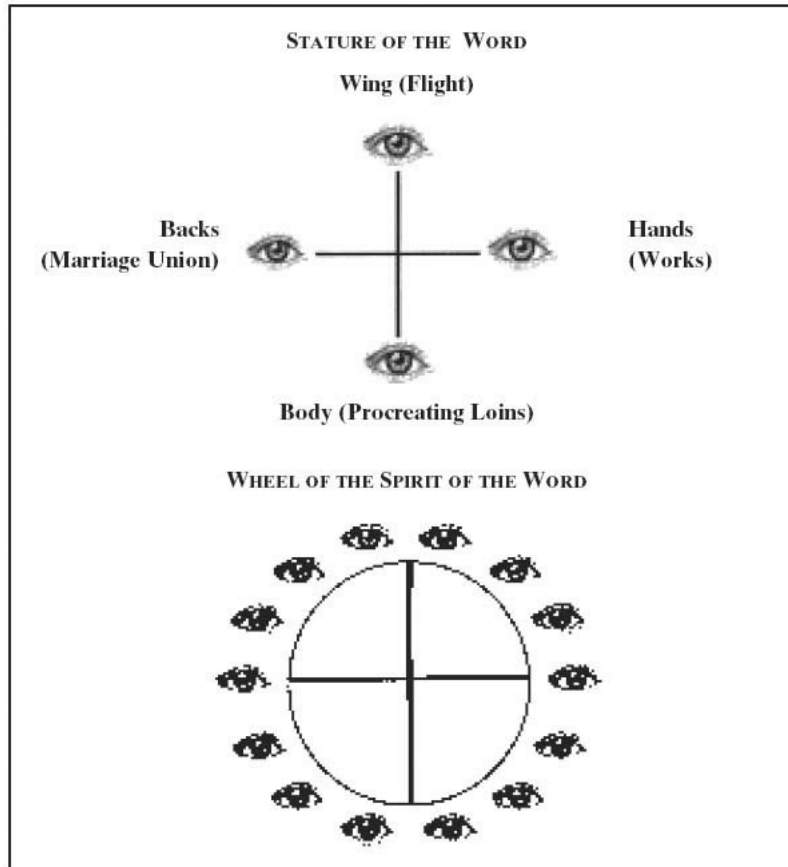
And I looked, and, behold, a whirlwind came out of the north, a great cloud, and a fire infolding itself, and a brightness was about it, and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the fire. Also **out of the midst thereof came the likeness of four living creatures**. And this was their appearance; they had the likeness of a man. **And every one had four faces, and every one had four wings**. And their feet were straight feet; and the sole of their feet was like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the colour of burnished brass. And they had the hands of a man under their wings on their four sides; and they four had their faces and their wings. Their wings were joined one to another; they turned not when they went; they went every one straight forward. As for the likeness of their faces, they four had the face of a man, and the face of a lion, on the right side: and they four had the face of an ox on the left side; they four also had the face of an eagle. Thus were their faces: and their wings were stretched upward; two wings of every one were joined one to another, and two covered their bodies. And they went every one straight forward: whither the spirit was to go, they went; and they turned not when they went. As for the likeness of the living creatures, their appearance was like burning coals of fire, and like the appearance of lamps: it went up and down among the living creatures; and the fire was bright, and out of the fire went forth lightning. And the living creatures ran and returned as the appearance of a flash of lightning. Now as I beheld the living creatures, behold one wheel upon the earth by the living creatures, with his four faces. The appearance of the wheels and their work was like unto the colour of a beryl: **and they four had one likeness: and their appearance and their work was as it were a wheel in the middle of a wheel**. When they went, they went upon their four sides: and they turned not when they went. As for their rings, they were so high that they were dreadful; **and their rings were full of eyes round about them four** (Ezekiel 1:4-18).

The Wheels which carry the Cherubims are the Wheels of the Spirit of God. We know that the Wheels also pertain to the Nature of the Word, for we see that "the spirit of the living creature was in the wheels" (Ezekiel 1:20). God never works apart from His Divine Nature; thus, the Wheels of the Spirit of the Word carry the same Divine Nature of Truth as seen in the Cherubims.

(See drawing on following page.)



As we study the Cherubims, we see the mature Stature of God’s Word that is filled with Eyes of Light. These were Eyes of Enlightenment of Wisdom, Understanding, and Knowledge. The Cherubims carry their eyes of Light in their bodies, on their backs, their hands, and their wings. Even the Wheels of the Spirit of the Word were filled with Eyes of Light. There are Eyes of the Word and Eyes of the Spirit which can enlighten our inner eyes, filling them with Divine Light.



**Eyes of the Body:** The eyes of the body pertain to procreating power or procreating eyesight of Light. Through these eyes of Light in the body, we become doers of good deeds which others can see which causes them to magnify and glorify God. Wherever Jesus went, He taught His Father’s Word and healed with His Father’s Power, causing glory, praise, and gratitude to be conceived and born in all hearts for His Deeds of Light through His Body (Luke 5:26). Likewise, when we teach and work according to God’s Purposive Will, we, too, cause hearts to conceive and give birth to praise and thanksgiving to God for His Truth and Deeds of Kindness that came through our bodies of Light.

**Eyes of the Backs:** The Cherubims had eyes in their backs. In Hebrew, the word for *back* means a curved place. The word *rings* in verse eighteen of chapter one comes from the same Hebrew word. In other words, the outer part of the Wheel was called a ring or a back. These eyes of the back also relate to the spiritual marriage union of our will or procreative eyesight with God’s Will of Light and Life.

Remember Jacob’s experience when he wrestled through the night with the pre-incarnate Son of God until he had his name (nature) changed from *Jacob* to *Israel*? From that day, he bore outward evidence of that transaction, for we read that “he halted.” The word for *halted*, in Hebrew, also means a curved rib. The same Hebrew root word is used in Genesis, chapter two, verse twenty-one, where God’s Word describes His making of a woman or a wife for Adam from one of his ribs.

And the LORD God caused a deep sleep to fall upon Adam, and he slept: and **he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof; And the rib, which the LORD God had taken from man, made he a woman**, and brought her unto the man. And Adam said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man (Genesis 2:21-23).

The Hebrew root word for *halt* is *tsawlah*, which comes from the same Hebrew word for *rib*, *tsaylaw*. Adam received his wife in marriage union after God had created her out of his rib from his inner man, called *eesh* in Hebrew, which is connected to the Hebrew word *aysh*, meaning fire, flaming, burning. For this reason, Adam called his wife a Woman, *ishshaw*, which is the Hebrew feminine form of *man*, *eesh*. Jacob entered into a new spiritual Marriage Relationship with the LORD after his thigh (which relates to the procreating area) had been curved or

made, as it were, into a rib. The curved back of the Cherubims suggests the same thought; therefore, these are procreating Eyes of God's Word in the Cherubims' backs or curves.

We, just as the Cherubims, have procreating eyes inside our will. For example, they work in connection with our natural marriage relationship. Because of the darkened condition of the procreating eyes of our will (back, rib), we have little understanding of our marriage partner. At times, we look at our spouse critically; and, sometimes, we may even regret our choice. Since all human relationships are imperfect and temporal, we never are quite content or satisfied with the person to whom we are married. Our darkened eyes of procreative power produce these feelings of discontentment and criticism.

The "back eyes" or curved eyes in the human will are working when we preach and witness to people about God's Word and His Bride's Message. Sometimes we are met by a blind, indifferent attitude from people when we tell them about growing up into a Oneness of Relationship with the Will of God. Their blind, darkened eyes give birth to their rejection because they cannot see nor understand. Their eyes are there, but they are blind and dark; therefore, they do not have Light to see. At other times, we witness to people about God's Truth of Salvation and growing up in Christ's Spiritual Stature, and they instantly light up with excitement, enthusiasm, and a desire to know the Truth. Their reactions indicate that their "back eyes" opened when they heard the message, generating a desire to grow up into Christ's Spiritual Stature and join their wills to His Holy Will. They saw it! Light came. Their procreative "back eyes" caught the vision.

These "back eyes" are "Word eyes." It takes the Power of God's Word to cleanse and heal the blindness and darkness of the eyes in our will, liberating them so that they might be enlightened and filled with Light. We all have these eyes in our will, but we become aware of them only when they suddenly are opened by the LORD's Word, allowing His Glorious Light to shine in.

"Back eyes" enable us to look back and remember. Each day we walk with God, a new eye opens up in the back of our curved, submissive will, helping us to see more clearly the things from which we have been separated in the past. We see where we have come from, spiritually, and it generates new gratitude in our heart toward God. With "back eyes," we see those things from which we have been delivered; therefore, the Light prevents us from picking up a new joining with some old sinful or carnal habit that we previously have known. Backward-eyes presently keep us grateful and rejoicing, all over again, for the things that God so graciously has done for us in the past.

**Eyes in the Hands:** The Cherubims also had eyes in their hands. Some people claim to play an instrument *by ear*. What they really mean is that they play *by hand*. How is this possible? Their ability comes, not through years of study and practice, but through the eyes that have been opened in their hands. Therefore, they see clearly how and where to touch in order to play well. Because people have these eyes in their hands, some may have surgeon's hands; some may have artist's hands; and some may have hands skilled in technical things, for instance. Although a surgeon must attend medical school in order to practice his skills, and an artist may study to improve his skills, neither of them gain the native abilities or aptitudes for their particular field in the classroom. Their talents are God-given; their hands can "see" to do because of the extrasensory perceptive eyes which God has given to them.

These "eyes of the hands" can be opened for some rare occasion and then close up again, or they can open and remain open.

The Old Testament Tabernacle with its intricate furniture and furnishings was built with "hand eyes." The artisans who produced the Tabernacle never had done that sort of work before. They were newly liberated slaves out of Egypt. God commanded them to perform the task of building the Tabernacle, and He opened the eyes of their hands, giving them the needed Light and ability to accomplish the work.

When God calls us and commands us to do something in His Work, we often take counsel with our darkened eyes of understanding and conclude we cannot do the job. But, the Truth is that if God calls us, He will open up the necessary eyes of our understanding and fill them with His Light so that we can accomplish His Work.

For example, many years ago, I found it necessary to have a picture of the Old Testament High Priest to use in teaching the Stature of Jesus Christ in the Mosaic Tabernacle. I looked for a portrait artist who could do this, but I found no one. Since I had experience only in painting landscapes, still life, and other types of subjects, I never once thought to try portrait painting. However, one night, the LORD spoke to me to do a portrait of the Old Testament High Priest. I felt the LORD's overwhelming Light, Life, and Anointing upon me. So, I took my easel, canvas, brushes, and oils, and prayed desperately that the LORD would help me at least to make his face look like a human being's. Nevertheless, the longer I painted, the worse the face seemed to appear to me. Afterward, when the LORD's Anointing had lifted, and I stepped back to look at my picture, I was so surprised to see the Priest's face, with eyes

of mercy, love, and kindness, looking out from the canvas at me. To God be all the Glory! Later, I used this same picture in the book I wrote entitled *Precious Gem In The Tabernacle*. God had opened *eyes* in my hands to do the job; then, these eyes were closed again. I never have painted another portrait! But, I learned that what God calls us to do, He will enable us to do, even if it means temporarily opening eyes in us that normally are closed.

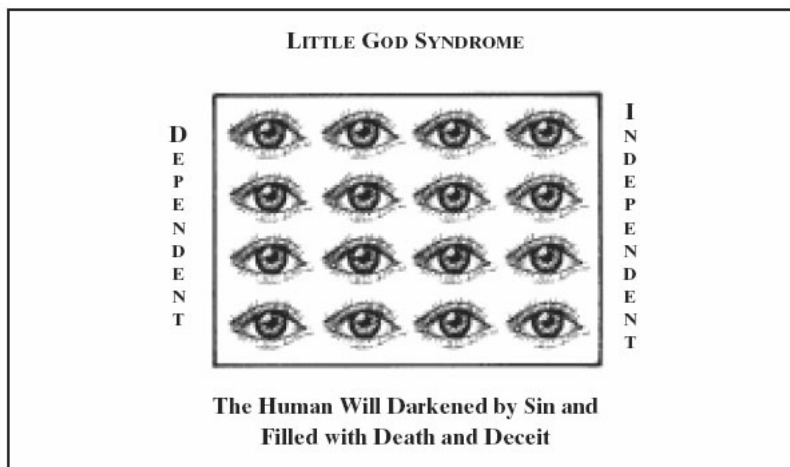
**Eyes in the Wings:** The Cherubims also had eyes in their wings. They were moving eyes which enabled them to fly swiftly in God’s Purposive Will. Whenever the Wheels of the Spirit of the Word start moving, the Cherubims (the Stature of the Word) fly right along with the Wheels of the Spirit.

**Eyes of the Wheel of the Spirit of the Word:** The eyes of the Wheel of the Spirit of the Word are described best in the fourth chapter of Revelation where we see the multitude of eyes possessed by the four Beasts or Living Creatures who stand in the *midst* of the Throne and *round about* God’s Throne in Heaven.

And before the throne there was a sea of glass like unto crystal: and in the midst of the throne, and round about the throne, were four beasts full of eyes before and behind.... And the four beasts had each of them six wings about him; and they were full of eyes within: and they rest not day and night, saying, Holy, holy, holy, Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come (Revelation 4:6,8).

The four Beasts had three classes of eyes. The eyes *before* gave them prophetic Light and Vision to look ahead. The eyes *behind* gave them backward prophetic Light and Vision to look into the past. The eyes *within* gave them inward Light and Vision to watch and protect their inner being from Darkness and Death. The first two sets of eyes relate to others and to outward things, whereas the inward eyes are concerned with the inner person. No wonder the four Beasts or Living Creatures attained unto such great Spiritual Stature. They grew to the Shoulder-realm and are seen together, prophetically, with the four and twenty Elders who lead all in Heaven in worship and praise to God.

Now, let us take a closer look at the eyes of our own will. Would that we all had the eyes of the Cherubims in Ezekiel and the eyes of the four Beasts or Living Creatures in Revelation! These eyes have to be opened within us through the Light of God’s Word and Spirit. Nevertheless, we still have many eyes in our will that are blind and dark; therefore, they are perverted and corrupted by our serpentine nature or flesh within. These eyes are too many to enumerate, but let us look at a few of them and see how they work in our life. Not only are there innumerable eyes, but each eye works out through many little rivers of influence within us, whether they be eyes of Light or eyes of Darkness.



Within our will, we all have an *eye of affliction* which enjoys afflicting others when they contrary our will or give us pain. This explains the meanness that seems to be inherent within even very young children.

This “afflicting eye” has procreating power. In its blindness and darkness, it looks out and sees something that it does not like; then, it generates an idea of how to punish others or vindicate itself.

It is our eye of affliction that sees all kinds of ways in which we can punish another creature by making him suffer and squirm to satisfy our blind, darkened will. The eye of affliction starts working early in life. As we mature, our forms of afflicting others become more subtle, but they are just as effective. No wonder the Apostle Paul declared, “In my flesh dwelleth no good thing.”

We have an *eye of appearance* which makes us concerned with only the outward appearance of anything. We

have eyes of appearance that can think and see ourself as “best.” This “best eye” functions very obviously in children. Children have not yet learned to cover their thoughts as effectively as adults, so they show themselves exactly for what they are. Give the same kind of sandwiches to a couple of children, and in a few minutes they will be quarreling over which sandwich is best. Or they will argue over who has the best dress, the best wagon, the best mommy, for example. This eye also works in adults, but usually they are less obvious about it than children, even though they still work to outdo their family, friends, and foes in order to have the best, just as children do.

God gave man this “best eye” so that he might make the highest choice in life, which is to have Christ Jesus and the full Measure of His Spiritual Stature. However, since man’s “best eye” became blinded and darkened by sin, his choices are blinded and darkened concerning what is best. Consequently, confusion and emptiness reign within his will. Man, who has exalted himself to the position of God (at least in his own thinking) is very often guilty of saying to God, in so many words, “I am the best. My way is the best.”

Until we learn better, our “best eye” makes us think, “My car is best. I am the best singer. I am the best preacher. I am the best cook. My figure is best. My success is best. Ours is the best product.” On and on the story goes.

It is easy to see when someone else is looking through his “best eye,” but the question is this: Can we really see the Truth when we are looking through our darkened “best eye”? Our “best eye” works in us all and will continue to do so until it is enlightened, and we begin to see the Light and Life of Truth — that God’s Will and God’s Way are best in every situation and that God gives the *best* to those who leave the choice to Him.

We also have an *eye of colour* down in our will. This is why two people cannot tell the same story. Both individuals may be sincere; yet, they will give conflicting reports because of their “colour eye.” We see what our blinded eye wants us to see, or we see what our enlightened eye wants us to see. If we are angry with someone, we will see through our red, angry eye. We will misinterpret every move they make, every word they say, and every look they make. But, if our eye of understanding has been enlightened with Christ’s Light of Truth, we will behold even our enemies with Christ’s Mercy, Love, and Forgiveness. Our “colour eye” influences our impressions in everything, either for good or evil, depending on whether it is in Darkness or Light.

In fact, scientists are discovering that people do not see colours and their densities alike. What may appear to be a very deep colour to one person may seem lighter to another. Hence, they are not lying about what they see, although it may not be the Truth. They just are looking through their “colour eye” and, therefore, are speaking out of that influence.

We all have an *eye of conceit*, an *eye of contentment*, an *eye of countenance*. We have an *eye of displeasure*, an *eye of shock*, an *eye of fear*, an *eye of favour*, an *eye of fountain*. We all have an *eye of humility*, an *eye of knowledge*, an *eye of looking*, an *eye of pleasing*, an *open eye*, a *presence eye*, and an *eye of regard*.

Because we are in the time just before the Coming of the LORD, people’s eyes are getting darker all the time because many are shutting out Christ’s Light of Truth. Darkness is increasing upon the face of the Earth and upon human beings and their wills. Their *eyes of regard*, *eyes of respect*, and *eyes of responsibility* are so cloudy and darkened that they cannot see to regard and to respect God and His Light of Truth; therefore, they do not assume their responsibility to bow in submissiveness to Him. To have regard for somebody means that one takes the other person’s rights into consideration. However, when people’s wills or little gods are on the throne of their hearts, causing them to think the whole universe is revolving around them, they have no regard for God or anybody else.

When the eye of responsibility is darkened, people can see a very obvious need with their physical eyes and know that they should assume responsibility for it; yet, they walk right on by as though it does not exist. They see, but they do not actually see because the “responsibility eye” of their wills are too darkened. The little god sits on the throne, saying, “The less I worry about other people and the less responsibility I assume, the greater will be my pleasure in my earthly paradise.”

This is not so. True paradise and pleasure come into being when we get our eyes opened and enlightened; come under God’s Headship; get self, our little god, off the throne of our heart and place God there instead. Once we have done these things, we are ready to go to work; then, we clearly can see how to take the responsibility of doing what the LORD commands us to do.

We have an *eye of reality*. We see reality only in the degree of Light we have in our eye of reality. Sometimes we feel very impatient and irritated because someone fails to see what we see. We are not to play a little god and act as though we have omnipotent vision. We should bear in mind that our eyes are darkened according to our environments, our inherited traits from Adam the First, and our experiences. Our eyes may be less dark in one area than another person’s, but that person may see better in another area than we do. Therefore, there is no reason for us

to feel superior if we happen to be able to see better out of our eye of reality than another person is able to see out of his eye of reality. We can be sure that we have many other eyes in our will which have not yet seen the first glimmer of Light.

There is no way of counting the people who have borne false witness because of a darkened *eye of resemblance*. When something about a man's walk or size or colour of hair or the shape of head or something else has turned on the eye of resemblance in a person, that person will testify that the man he saw was the individual he had in mind.

The religious world does the same thing. They find something that resembles Truth and, then, declare it to be the actual *Truth*.

God gave us this eye of resemblance for our good. For example, this eye is a great eye to have for studying the Word of God. When God's Light and Truth fill this eye, it works beautifully in helping the student to relate studies in the Word of God by tying them together "syn-topically."\*

We all have *eyes of vision*. This is how people who are not Christians can have visions. The Devil knows that the "vision eye" can be controlled by demonic spirits if a person does not stay under the protective covering of the Blood of Jesus Christ. It is our eyes of vision which cause us to dream while we sleep. Men have researched the subject of dreams and still are mystified in many aspects, for they still are unable to explain why a person dreams. God's Word discloses that dreams and visions originate out of the eyes of vision in the human will.

We also have *eyes of advice*. When the eye of advice is blinded and darkened, little god takes the throne of our heart, and he knows exactly how to figure out everybody's problems and situations (except his own, of course). This particular eye in our will causes us to love to hand out advice to others. We even take counsel with our own will and advise ourself. We are sure to convince ourself of our own worthiness to sit on the throne — others can give up their plans, but we cannot!

These are a few samples of the multitude of eyes that God gave man down in his human will. It is tragic that these eyes were clouded, blinded, and covered with Darkness by sin. What remarkable sense of perception God equipped man with in the beginning! We need these *eyes of revelation*, *eyes of redemption*, and *eyes of satisfaction* cleansed from Darkness and Death and opened up with the LORD's Light and Life. Let us pray and cry out to God, saying, "Open my eyes so that I may see!"

---

\* B. R. Hicks, *Instructive Wisdom to Help Rightly Divide God's Word* (Jeffersonville, Indiana: Christ Gospel Churches Int'l., Inc. 1991), pp. 245-265.

# Chapter Five

## The Little God Syndrome

We have learned that God brought down a Heavenly Paradise and planted or fastened it as a Garden in the Land of Eden on Earth for the perfect Adam (male and female). A river flowed there, breaking into four streams as it progressed on its way out of the Garden. In the midst of the Garden, God planted the Tree of Life and the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.

And the LORD God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. And out of the ground made the LORD God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; **and the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil.** And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads (Genesis 2:8-10).

In the midst or center of the Garden stood the two special Trees, and a river also flowed there. The Garden also was filled with Trees that were pleasant to behold and good for eating purposes. The two Trees in the midst of the Garden, however, carried a unique significance. Together, these Trees were Jesus Christ. Separated, as they were here, the Tree of Life was Jesus in Spirit and Soul Form before His incarnation, and the Tree of Knowledge was the Divine Christ, the Word of God.

Jesus is the Tree of Light and Life. Jesus said, after His incarnation, “I am the *light* of the world” (John 8:12). He also said, “I am the way, the truth, and the *life* (John 14:6). In making this distinction, we must bear in mind that the Name *Jesus* relates to the Humanity aspect of our LORD Jesus Christ, and *Christ* (or the Word) relates to His Divinity.

For further clarification, let us note that here, in the Garden of Eden, Jesus, the Son of God, abode as the Tree of Life in an *Invisible* Form, clothed as it were with the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil.

This teaches us that God’s Purposive Will is for All Knowledge to be centered in the Tree of Life and Light. Since Jesus Christ did not yet have a Body of His own, He stood in the Garden in Spirit and Soul Form. By contrast, the Christ, the Word of God, with its twofold aspect of Pleasure and Pain clearly was *visible*.

The Tree of Knowledge stood on either side of the Tree of Life to enclose the invisible Light and Life of Jesus. This is why it was so easy for the Serpent to tempt Adam-female. She had to have had a revelation in order to see the invisible Tree of Life. She could have asked the Tree of Knowledge to help her find the Tree of Life and Light, instead of stealing some of the Fruit and Leaves from the Tree of Knowledge. After Adam-female had eaten of the forbidden Tree, she stole more Fruit from the Tree and gave it to Adam-male, who deliberately took the Fruit from his wife and ate it. There was just one approach to the Tree of Life, and that was on the east side of the Garden.

God deliberately hid Jesus — Who was, is, and always will be Light and Life — by enclosing Him within the visible Pleasure and Pain of the Tree of Knowledge. The Serpent knew there was just one *legitimate* way to bring Adam-female into the Tree of Life, so he brought her *another way* and presented the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil (pleasure and pain) to her, declaring that it would not bring death or mortality to her, but that it would make her a god.

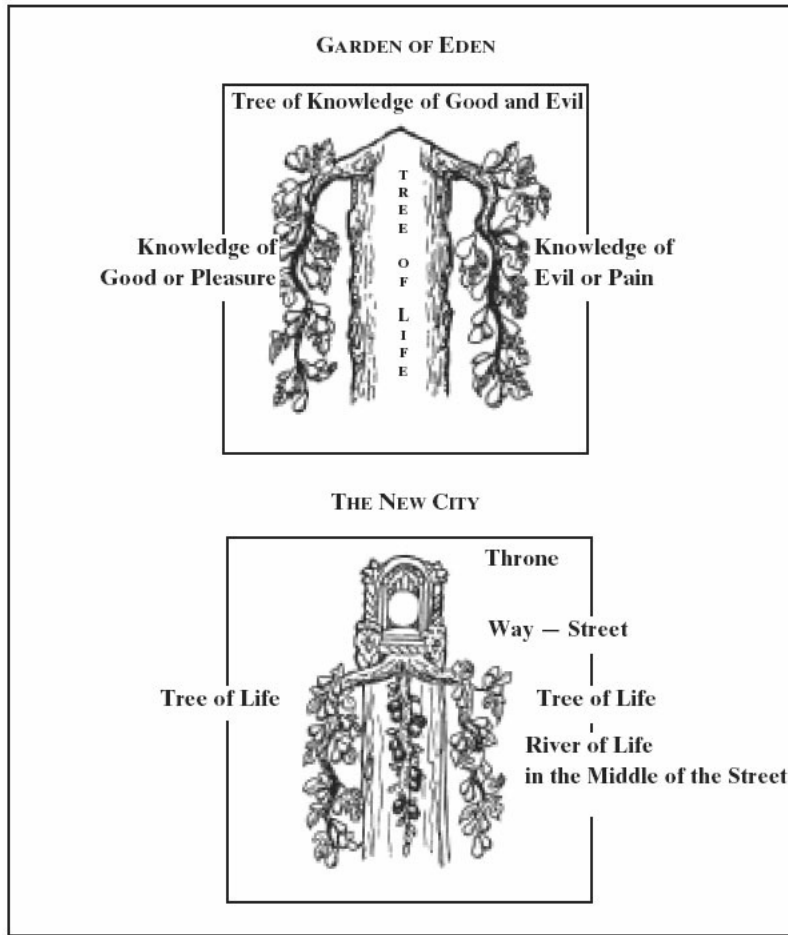
This Principle works the same way today. We can teach and witness about the Word (which encompasses both pleasure and pain); yet, people can miss finding the Tree of Life with His Light and Life in the midst of pleasure and pain. It takes a personal revelation to see the inner Jesus, the inner Bridegroom, the inner Light and Life.

Failure to find Jesus makes it impossible for us to handle the Pleasure and Pain Principle that works in the lives of us all. We cannot rightly divide pain and pleasure until we come to Jesus, Who is the Source of Light and Life. Without His Light of Understanding and His Life of Wisdom, we are unprepared for the Glory of His Knowledge. Consequently, we do not know how to relate to nor divide our experiences of pleasure and pain. We call that which is pleasure *pain*. And that which is pain, we call *pleasure*. Without the Light and Life of Jesus, the balance of pleasure and pain becomes totally unbalanced, resulting in confusion and emptiness.

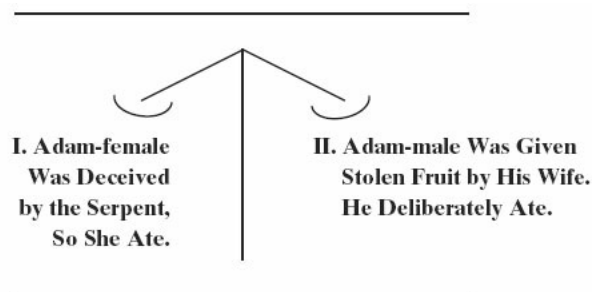
Revelation, chapter twenty-two, describes another of God’s Paradises, the New City (New Jerusalem). There flows a River of Life, and in the midst and on either side of the River of Life stands a Tree of Life which bears twelve kinds of Fruit and which produces Leaves for the healing of the nations. The Tree of Life in the New City is divided in this way: one part is in the center of the River and one part is on either side of the River, making three

parts. The picture is the same, basically, as the one in the Garden of Eden.

(See drawing on following page.)

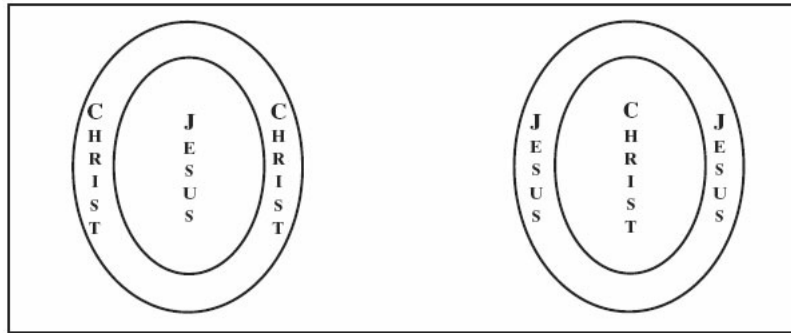


Adam-male and Adam-female rejected Jesus when He stood in Spirit and Soul form in the Garden. He was hidden within the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. Jesus existed in a humility state, indeed, for He did not have a Body of His own; instead, He was clothed by the Word and the Glory of the Word. Through deceit, Adam-female was drawn to the Glory of Knowledge, although she knew she should eat of the Tree of Life and that she should choose *not* to eat of the visible Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. However, Adam-male made a *deliberate* choice to eat the forbidden Fruit, so instead of obeying God and eating first of the invisible Tree of Life, they both ate from the Tree of Knowledge, which made them both guilty.

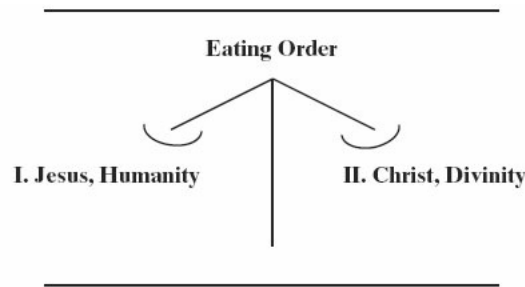


Later, God mercifully gave man another choice; only that time the order was reversed. When Jesus the Son took to Himself a physical Body, He was made visible before the eyes of men, and the Christ (the Word of God) was hidden and invisible within Him. God hid the Pleasure and Pain Principle of His Word within the Person of Jesus, the only Begotten Son of God. Again, mankind rejected Jesus. Mankind did not accept Jesus in either form in which

God presented Him. Man did not like Jesus when God made Him invisible and put the Word on the outside; neither did he like Jesus when God put the Word on the inside and made Jesus visible on the outside.



It was God’s Plan that Adam-male and Adam-female eat of and know both Jesus (Obedient Humanity) and the Christ (Obedient Divinity), but it was vital that they eat in the proper order. Light and Life came by Jesus and His Humanity Life. They had to eat of Him first. God’s Master Plan and Purposive Will concerning this order never has changed: Humanity first; Divinity second.



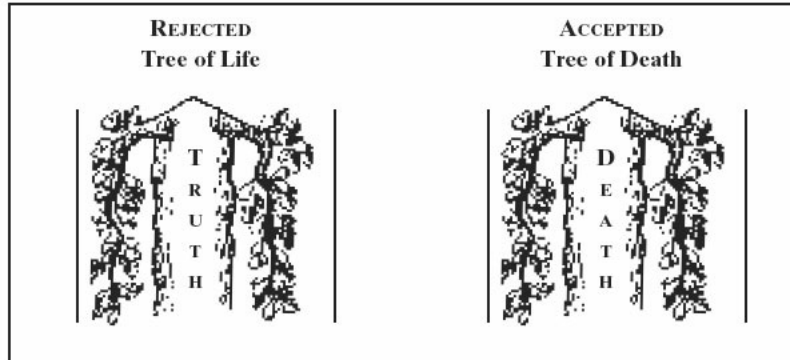
It was essential for Adam-male and Adam-female to eat and learn of Jesus’ complete Subjection to the Will of God and to eat and learn to abide in full dependence upon Jesus for their very lives. Having learned this, their beings and wills would have been filled with the Light and Life of God’s Truth through the Humility-Humanity Life of Jesus; thus they would have been ready to eat of the Divine Christ, the Tree of Knowledge. Only then could they safely have had the Pleasure and Pain Principle that exists in God committed unto them. God is Light, but He created Darkness for a covering for His Light (Isaiah 45:7; Psalm 97:2). He also is *Good* (Pleasure) and *Evil* (Pain). Evil or pain with God is not sin. God suffers pain and grief when His creation defects from Him and goes astray from Him.

Lucifer, in the form of the Serpent, came into the Garden, saying, in so many words, “You should establish your own independence. You will not die. Your life does not depend upon the Tree of Life.” What deceit to imagine that a “coal of fire” will keep burning when it has been removed from its Source of Fire. A “coal of fire” removed from the Source of Fire becomes a cold clinker. This is what Adam-male and Adam-female became after they had eaten of the Forbidden Tree and had rejected the Tree of Life with its Fire of Life. They ate of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, and their eyes were opened — not their outward eyes —but the inner eyes of their wills were opened under Lucifer’s disobedient, deceitful headship, so they saw as Lucifer sees (Darkness and Death). Therefore, their eyes were closed to God’s Light and Life. However, there were other inner eyes in man’s will that remained closed, waiting to be opened in the future by the Tree of Life.

Thus, the will of fallen Lucifer found entrance into and union with man’s human will. Adam-male and Adam-female ate of the Tree of Knowledge and became gods in their own minds. In other words, the Serpent came along and said, “Look, you are a little higher than the Tree of Life in there. He does not even have a Body yet, while you are complete with a body, a soul, and a spirit. Certainly you are more worthy to fill this inner position within your will with the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. You will be gods.”

When they swallowed the Serpent’s deceitful lie and ate of the forbidden Tree, the eyes of their wills were opened. However, because of sin, these eyes were filled with Darkness and Death; therefore, they were void of

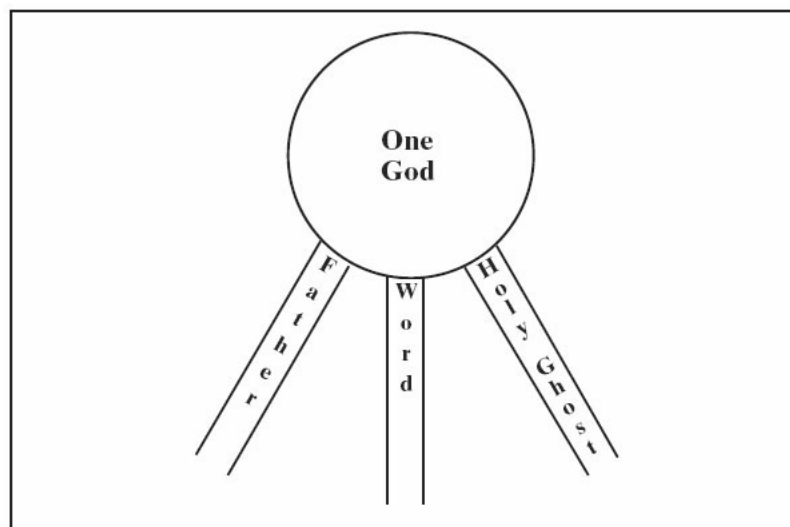
understanding. When their human wills accepted the perverted will of Lucifer, a new marriage union took place between their wills and fallen Lucifer's will. Had they accepted God's Will, they would have had a River of Truth of Light and Life flowing down the middle of their wills — Truth that would have filled them with the LORD's Light and LIFE! Instead, they were joined to the Serpent's will with its River of Deceit, which brings Darkness and DEATH.



This was the beginning of the little god syndrome. A syndrome is a combination of symptoms occurring together which characterize a specific disease. This is the disease that has plagued the human race ever since its beginning. Adam the First made the choice; and because of his unwise choice, all of Adam's posterity now possesses the knowledge of good and evil — the inescapable Reality Principle of Pleasure and Pain. Since receiving it, mankind has been in a quandary to know what to do with this class of knowledge. Man's will now is controlled by a River of Deceit. Sin has darkened the many eyes of his will. The deceit within man has convinced him that he now is *Elohim*, a plurality of gods — three gods, in fact.

And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and **ye shall be as gods**, knowing good and evil (Genesis 3:4,5).

The Hebrew text reads that Lucifer, in His Serpent form, said, "Ye shall become *Elohim*." This Hebrew word is translated in English as *God*, representing the Triune God: the Father, the Son joined to the Word, and the Holy Ghost. Because the little letter *m* is added to the Hebrew word for *Elohim*, the word stands as a uniplural noun, meaning One God; yet, a plurality exists within that Oneness. God manifests and reveals Himself as Father, Son-joined-to-Word, and Holy Ghost. The word *Elohim* means strength, the strong One, to bind oneself with an oath, so implying faithfulness. *Elohim* (God) is one of God's three primary Names\* revealed in the Old Testament, and it relates to God's Creative Power.



The Serpent used the word *Elohim* when he said, “Ye shall be as gods — as *Elohim*.” He convinced Adam-female that she would be a plurality of gods — father, son, and holy ghost. She believed that if she established her own will she could be like God and rule by her own will.

From Adam the First, we all have inherited the same corrupted will, the same darkened eyes, the same confusion of independence and dependence — the same *little god syndrome*.

And **when the woman saw that the tree was good for food**, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, **she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat** (Genesis 3:6).

As soon as they ate of the forbidden fruit, they knew they had usurped God’s rightful place in their lives, and this guilt produced fear. Yet, immediately, they began to devise a plan for their own redemption, believing that it would result in complete happiness and satisfaction. They could not use God’s Will of Redemption, Revelation, and Satisfaction because they had rejected it in its Tree-of-Life Form. So, they had to work with Lucifer’s corrupted, perverted will, which included the Pride of Revelation, the Pride of Redemption, and the Pride of Satisfaction.

Notice, the difference in the order of the two wills. According to their corrupted revelation, they could redeem themselves from nakedness simply by sewing fig leaves together in the form of aprons. “And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons” (Genesis 3:7).

If they thought God would be satisfied with their work, they were wrong. God cast them out of the Garden because there was no room in Paradise for them to practice their little god syndrome.

Adam-male and Adam-female left the Garden of Eden as little “gods,” reigning in their own kingdom of sin. They went out with a perverted will in them and with the little god syndrome asserting itself as little god the father, little god the son, and little god the holy ghost.

Down through the ages, mankind has fostered the little god syndrome. Even psychiatrists recognize the role-playing done by humans. They label it as the *adult*, the *child*, and the *parent*. Sometimes, we enjoy playing the adult-father act. Other times, we play the little son act; then, again, we play the part of the motherly parent. Psychiatry has done much to help us understand ourself; it shows us how to control ourself better and how to rearrange our thinking. Nevertheless, psychiatry, basically, is powerless to change us because we are redeemed from our fallen nature only through Jesus Christ’s Blood. Until we receive Christ’s Redemption, our little god remains on the throne, bossing the whole show of our life. As long as he retains this stolen position of power, confusion and conflict, anger and distress, misery and problems will continue to reign in the human heart.

The little god syndrome is the root of all our problems. Anyone in doubt of this has only to ask himself a few simple questions. For example: Would mental sickness and emotional derangements be spiralling upward at alarming rates if man were at peace with God? Would suicides, especially among the intelligentsia of our day, be increasing if man’s revelation of paradise were correct? Would crime be accelerating daily if man were able to redeem himself? Would social problems of dope addiction, alcoholism, political chaos, pornography, abortions, and venereal diseases be at epidemic proportions if man were truly satisfied in his little kingdom? Even casual observation shows that we are doing poorly as little gods. Our only hope is to turn back to the True God and give Him the reins of our heart and control of our will and life again. Let Him be God!

Little god the father works in the following manner: he is the little adult inside who does all the inner grouping of ideas, facts, and data. After putting all these things together and coming up with a plan, he brings forth his judgment. He marches out so authoritatively and says, “You do what I say. Don’t bother to ask why. Just do it. I don’t have to explain to you. After all, *I am god*.”

It is the “father” part of us that thinks we know all about every situation. Little god the father thinks he is capable of taking counsel with his own will. This is why we often become angry. Our little god the father determines what we want and how we want it. If our plan is contraried in any way, bubbles of displeasure begin to form and, ultimately, work into real anger.

Anger is the weapon we use to try to establish our kingdom and throne so that everyone will be aware that we are little gods and that the whole universe revolves around us. Self-centeredness (thinking that nothing exists apart from our own little world) comes from our little god syndrome.

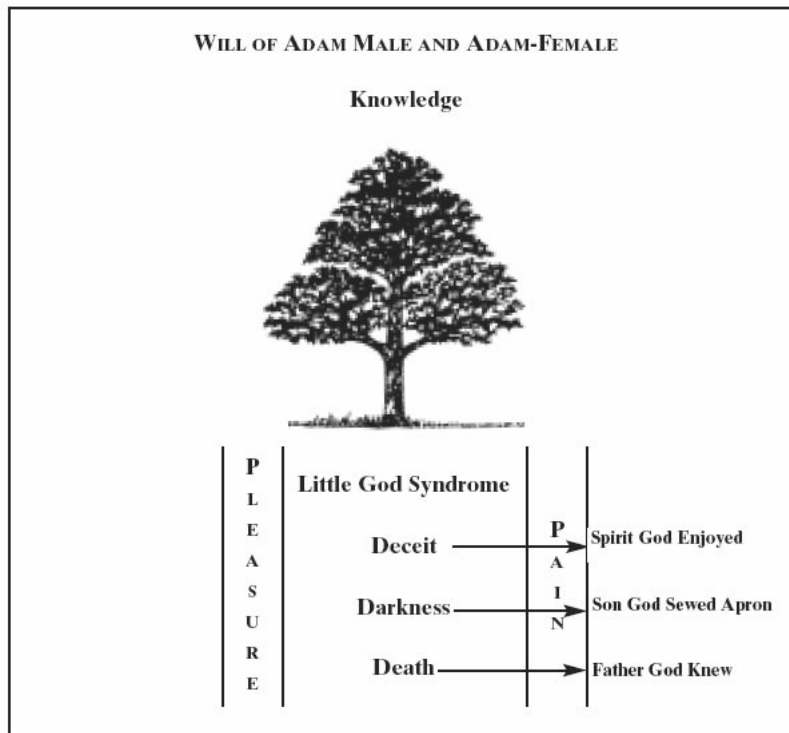
Adam-male and Adam-female knew what they had done; they realized that they were naked. It was not their physical nakedness that bothered them. It was what now was in their inner loins — in the area of their wills. They considered themselves rivals against God. They tried to cover up the inner part of their wills and hide the fact that

they were filled with Darkness and Death instead of Light and Life of the Truth.

Little god the father began to operate at this point. He processed all the data at hand and concluded, “We are naked, but that is not bad. We can redeem it. We still don’t need the Tree of Life; we are quite independent now. We are supreme deities now.” That is the actual connotation of the phrase “Ye shall be as gods...” In other words, “Ye shall be supreme deities.” They believed the Serpent’s lie, so in their own minds they became supreme rivals of God. In essence they said, “God knows very well that we now are His rivals. He doesn’t want us to eat of that Tree because, then, we will be as powerful as He.”

Because they were supreme deities in their own minds, possessing knowledge or omniscience that made them just like God, Adam-male and Adam-female thought that the matter of nakedness presented no problem.

Little god the father soon worked out the solution. “We will sew ourself aprons of fig leaves.” The word sew means to tie and twist together. The word *apron* means a girdle, a belt, an armour. Little god the father, which relates to the revelation part of fallen Lucifer’s will, came up with the solution. Little god the son, which relates to Lucifer’s proud redemptive will, helped to bring the plan into being. Little god the motherly parent stood back and admired the beauty of the apron. The mother part of the little god syndrome relates to the will of satisfaction. Adam-male and Adam-female had to have been satisfied with what they had produced; otherwise, they would have ripped it off and run to God for help. We read nothing about that happening. Therefore, we know they must have felt very satisfied with the sufficiency of their redemptive plan.



And they heard the voice of the LORD God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden. And the LORD God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldst not eat? (Genesis 3:8-11).

Fortunately, Adam-male and Adam-female did not steal the entire Tree of Knowledge. They stole only the portions which they ate and the Leaves with which they made themselves aprons to cover their nakedness and to fight against God. Those portions of stolen Fruit and Leaves were sufficient to bring Deceit, Darkness, and Death into their world. Yet, for a little while, they enjoyed their fig-leaf aprons. Little god the father was delighted with his new idea. Little god the son was so proud of how he had redeemed the situation, and the little spirit-god enjoyed the sufficiency and beauty of his apron.

Things changed, however, when the Word came walking in the Garden. Their little god syndrome could not stand

up against the Word. (Neither can our little gods stand up against God's Word). As the Earth began to shake and quake under the Power of God's Word, the little god syndrome called a quick counsel meeting. After little father-god processed the situation, little son, the redeemer, said, "We had better hide. God will not be able to tell us from all the rest of the Trees."

Instead of repenting and saying, "Oh, God, we have missed it. We are rivals now. We are enemies and not friends. Forgive us," Adam-male and Adam-female said within their hearts, "We can outdo You, God. Just give us a chance, and we will show You. You won't be able to find us among the Trees. We will redeem ourself out from under Your control." Thus, we read: "And Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the LORD God amongst the trees of the garden."

Notice God's Goodness, Patience, and Long-suffering with mankind. In spite of all that had transpired, God continued seeking them. "And the LORD God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou?" The first words God spoke to the sinful pair came in the form of a question. God knew very well the whereabouts of Adam-male and Adam-female, but in asking the question, He gave them another opportunity to confess their problem and acknowledge the Truth. There is no telling what God's Mercy and Love would have provided for them if they had repented and acknowledged their sin that day.

Many of us continue to struggle after we have become Christians, simply because we are not honest with ourself and with God. We fail to confess our need and acknowledge the facts as they really are. God can help us if we are honest. There is no case so black nor hopeless that God cannot do something about it if we will just be honest with Him. We *must* confess our sin before it can be forgiven. So it was with Adam and Eve (as Adam-female was called after she sinned) that day. God was offering them an opportunity to *come clean* with Him, but they never did.

Later, God also used the questioning approach with Cain after he had murdered his brother. Wanting Cain to confess the condition he was in, God asked Cain, "Where is Abel thy brother?" God knew where Abel was all the time. Although Cain failed to acknowledge his crime, God gave him still another chance, asking, "What hast thou done?" It was God's way of extending Mercy. There was forgiveness for Cain if he had grasped his opportunity and confessed his sin.

So it is with us today. The LORD waits for our confession; then, there is forgiveness. Without confession and repentance, we must bear the full consequences of our sin, just as Adam the First did.

We never find that Adam confessed the Truth, though he talked about his nakedness and fear. The Truth was that he had disobeyed the Word of God. He had chosen the perverted will of Lucifer rather than the Righteous Will of God. This he never acknowledged. God probed further with another question, trying to pull out of him an honest confession of the Truth. "Who told thee that thou wast naked?" Adam was silent. There was no repentance on his part. He really wanted God to go away and leave him alone.

God continued to press for the Truth by asking, "Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat?" Redemption and deliverance from sin begins with the Truth, but Adam never would confess his sin; he never would acknowledge the Truth of the whole matter. Instead, he pointed his finger at Adam-female and, thus, actually put the blame back on God, for it was God Who had given Adam's wife to him.

And the man said, *The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree*, and I did eat (Genesis 3:12).

"It was all her fault. I was just innocently standing there, God; and, would You believe, she took that fruit and literally shoved it down my throat?" What blasphemy! What ingratitude! He was accusing both the Gift and the Giver.

Adam-male had no right to speak against his wife. If he had properly taught Adam-female the Word of Command that God had given to him, she would have understood better how to withstand the Tempter. It is obvious that she did not have the inner revelation of the Word of God, for she so readily accepted the contradictory revelation of the Serpent. Neither did Adam-male have grounds to speak against God, for God had provided him with the most perfect place in all the Earth in which to live and to have fellowship with Him.

The little god syndrome never comes up with the Truth. If it could, there would be no need for us to be born again. But, there is nothing in us that can be cultivated, nurtured, and developed until we become creatures of Light and Life of the Truth. This is possible only through a spiritual rebirth. We must be born again spiritually. We must start from a new beginning, and that beginning takes place when we accept Jesus Christ as our personal Saviour. We then are made partakers of His Divine Nature, and out of that New Nature, we begin to confess the Truth and walk according to the Light, Life, and Knowledge from it. That is why sinners do not see what we are talking about. They

are ruled by their little god syndrome and their darkened understanding. This is what the Apostle Paul was speaking about in the Book of Second Corinthians.

But if our gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them.... For God, who commanded the light to shine out of darkness, hath shined in our hearts, to give the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jesus Christ (II Corinthians 4:3,4,6).

Adam-female was just as badly afflicted with the little god syndrome as her husband was, but God did not ask her about breaking His Word. This shows that she was not as responsible as her husband, for the Command had been given to Adam-male. God questioned Adam-female, asking, "What is this that thou hast done?" She, like her husband, failed to confess her sin. She absolved herself of guilt by putting the blame on the Serpent, whom she said had beguiled her.

God spoke no more with them concerning the matter. He had made His thrust for the Truth, but it never came from their lips. Judgment was spoken to Adam-male and Adam-female, but a curse was pronounced upon the Serpent and upon the ground.

And the LORD God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, **thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field;** upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. **Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life;** Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return (Genesis 3:14-19).

God is so Merciful. He will not curse His creatures unless they continue to rebel and resist His Will; then, He permits man to enter into Satan's curse. Although Adam-male and Adam-female were not cursed personally, their disobedience and sin brought a curse to others.

It is so with us also. Sometimes we sin and ultimately come to repentance and forgiveness, but our sin results in bringing a curse upon others who may not be forgiven all the days of their lives on Earth because they may not come to the place of repentance.

We see this Principle illustrated in the hatred between Esau and Jacob. After Esau had repented of his own hatred against Jacob and after harmony had been restored between the two brothers, the spirit of hatred continued to burn in the hearts of Esau's descendants. Esau's descendants, the Arabs, still hate Jacob's descendants, the Jews.

God had to cast the unrepentant Adam-male and Adam-female out of the beautiful Garden, lest they eat of the Tree of Life and live forever in their sinful state.

And **the LORD God said,** Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and **now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the LORD God sent him forth from the garden of Eden,** to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life (Genesis 3:22-24).

The remorse experienced by both Adam-male and Adam-female must have been painful after they had been cast out of Paradise. However, God did not put them out totally destitute. He mercifully provided them a covering that was acceptable to Him. Blood was shed as little animals died vicariously for the sin of Adam-male and Adam-female. The skins of the animals provided a covering to clothe the pair in their sinful condition. Thus, the beginning of blood sacrifices as a covering for sin was established with Adam the First, and the Truth was handed down through the generations who followed.

The LORD God sent the guilty pair forth by the way of the east side. Then, He placed Cherubims there to insure the continued exclusion of the sinful couple. They went out on the east side, and their coming back to God (as pictured in the Old Testament Tabernacle) began at the door on the east side (Exodus 27:12-16).

Just as Adam and Eve were sent out covered with a blood sacrifice, so must we begin our journey back to God through the acceptance of the shedding of Christ's Blood, for the sin offering on Calvary's Cross, which was pictured by the Brazen Altar on the east side of the Tabernacle. God never changes His Principles.

Although fallen Adam and Eve were outside the Garden, they still were living in the Land of Eden. In the beginning, Adam-female shared Adam's name (Genesis 5:2). The woman was not called *Eve* until after she had

sinned. Being in Eden, they still enjoyed a certain measure of the Presence of the LORD, but they could no longer talk face to Face with God. There always was a flaming sword ( which symbolizes the Word of God) at the entrance of the Garden. Adam and Eve rejected the Sword of God's Word in the Garden, but they did not escape God's Sword, for God placed His Sword-Word on the east side to keep the Way to the Tree of Life.

Either we take God's Word on the blessing side (which is God's Perfect Will for us), or we experience it on the Judgment side, as did Adam and Eve. Nevertheless, God did provide a legitimate way back to Himself through the Blood. God's Law is that without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sin (Hebrews 9:22).

Adam and Eve were left to themselves to reign and rule as little gods in their own kingdom, but they lived under God's Judgment instead of God's Blessings. What a tragic choice they made!

Mankind has suffered horrible consequences because our first parents decided they wanted to be little gods — little *Elohim(s)*.

---

\* B. R. Hicks, *Drops Of Doctrine* (Jeffersonville, Indiana: Christ Gospel Churches Int'l, Inc., 1975).

# Chapter Six

## The Reality Principle

God never teaches His Doctrine or Principles of Knowledge to spiritual babes. These precious Truths are committed only to those who, having been weaned from the milk and drawn from the breasts, have gained enough maturity in God to be able to walk without losing their spiritual equilibrium.

**Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts.** For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: (Isaiah 28:9,10).

When the LORD God placed Adam-male and Adam-female in the Garden of Eden, He committed certain power and authority to them by gift. However, as far as their inward spiritual maturity was concerned, they were babes. He intended to promote their inner growth and development by letting them feed off the Tree of Life (Who was Jesus in Spirit and Soul form) until they matured in Redemptive Understanding, Revelation Wisdom, and Satisfaction Knowledge on both the day and night sides of His Will.

Exactly what Doctrine in God's Word was set forth by the visible Tree in the midst of the Garden? It was God's Reality Principle of Pleasure-joined-to-Pain and Pain-joined-to-Pleasure. In spite of the fact that it was separated to accommodate the invisible Tree of Life within it, the Tree of Knowledge was one, and its fruit was one. Since this Tree of Knowledge was a "Doctrine-Tree," and since we know that Doctrine is not for spiritual babes, it is easy to see why God commanded Adam-male and Adam-female not to eat of it. It was not, as the Serpent suggested, that God was trying to deprive them of Knowledge in order to keep them in servitude. On the contrary, He wanted to nurture Adam-male and Adam-female, spiritually, on the Truth, the Tree of Life, so that they would have the inner Stature needed to appreciate and enjoy the Revealed Word in its Pleasure and Pain forms.

If our first parents had obeyed God's order of eating in the Garden and had begun feeding on the Tree of Life first, the innermost part of their human wills would have been filled with a Stature of Light, Life, and Truth. Then, in God's time, once He had led them to eat of the Tree of Knowledge, the Tree would not have brought Death to them. It became a Tree of Death because they partook of Knowledge prematurely, outside of God's Perfect Will.

When God planted the Tree of Knowledge (the Tree of Christ, the Word) in the Garden of Eden, He put it there, not to tempt man, but to give him a vision of the Word that was in store for him if he would let the Stature of the Tree of Life (Jesus) grow up inside him. It takes the Stature of Jesus' Will of Redemptive Understanding, Revelation Wisdom, and Satisfaction Knowledge for us to be able to balance, properly, the Reality Principle of Pleasure and Pain.

Let us look again at the Will of Jesus and remind ourselves what Fruits of the Spirit are produced by the Tree of Life.

(See diagram on following page.)

<b>THE EXALTED WILL OF JESUS, THE TREE OF LIFE</b>	
<b>Will of Satisfaction Knowledge</b>	<b>Long-suffering Goodness Meekness — Humility Temperance</b>
<b>Will of Revelation Wisdom</b>	<b>Sincerity Surrender Gentleness Faith</b>
<b>Will of Redemptive Understanding</b>	<b>Love Joy Peace Mercy</b>

Nine of these Fruits are listed in Galatians, chapter five, verses twenty-two and twenty-three. The Bride in the Song of Solomon had all these nine Fruits growing in the garden of her heart; plus, she had three others.\* Her fruit of love was pictured as pomegranates; her joy as camphire; her peace as spikenard; her long-suffering as saffron; her gentleness as calamus; her goodness as cinnamon; her faith as frankincense; her meekness as myrrh; and her temperance as aloes (Song of Solomon 4:13,14).

The Bride also possessed the following three fruits, which relate particularly to the Bride-Bridegroom relationship: her fruit of sincerity was pictured as a fig tree (chapter 2:13); her surrender as a vine tree (chapter 2:13); and her mercy or sharing as a nut tree (Chapter 6:11). The Bride gained these lovely graces by feeding on the Tree of Life and letting His Stature grow to maturity in her heart. Thus, she attained exactly what God had wanted to work in the hearts of Adam-male and Adam-female.

Adam-male and Adam-female never had a beautiful garden growing in their hearts because they chose to accept the corrupted will of fallen Lucifer. In fallen man's heart, love became hate; joy became sadness; peace became unrest; and mercy became unmercifulness. Sincerity became insincerity; surrender became rebellion; gentleness became unkindness; and faith became doubt. Long-suffering became impatience; goodness became wickedness; meekness became pride; and temperance became intemperance.

As we mentioned earlier, God's Plan was to teach the pair the lesson of dependence upon the Tree of Life, first; then, to teach them the lesson of independence from the Tree of Knowledge which would have resulted in their participation in God's Satisfaction Will. However, Adam-male and Adam-female never found satisfaction, for the mystery of satisfaction in the midst of pleasure and pain is unlocked only to those who get the order of eating straight and come to the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil in God's Perfect Order and Will.

By asserting their own independence and going outside of God's Perfect Will, the guilty pair found only darkness and confusion when they ate of the Tree of Knowledge. We must eat in God's order if we are to have Light, Life, and Truth and Understanding.

It takes Jesus' Redemptive Understanding to redeem. We cannot redeem with our hatred and sadness; we must have His Love and His Joy. We cannot redeem with fleshly turmoil and strife; we must have His Peace and Mercy.

Jesus' Will of Revelation Wisdom produces the Fruits of Sincerity, Surrender, Gentleness, and Faith. The only way to be sincere is to have a true revelation of God. Surrender also is a revelation from God. Jesus could surrender because He had His Father's Will of Revelation. We cannot surrender because our ignorance hinders us from seeing things as they really are.

Gentleness means kindness. We cannot be kind without a revelation from God, for we all, basically, are selfish and self-centered. We cannot believe God because we do not have a revelation of His Will. Only a revelation of God can produce true Faith.

The Fruits of Jesus' Will of Satisfaction Knowledge are Long-suffering, Goodness, Meekness, and Temperance. Since God knows evil or pain, it is evident that He can suffer. He has been Long-suffering toward each one of us, many times over. Therefore, God's Suffering has nothing to do with sin or Death, error or faults. God is able to suffer without being unhappy about it. God also knows Good or Goodness, for He is the Source of all Goodness. He also knows Meekness (Humility) and Temperance (Moderation).

**True Satisfaction is a Holy Marriage Union of Pleasure and Pain.** God is complete within Himself. He has all Bowels of Pleasure and Delight. The fact that Good and Evil were joined together in the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil means there was a Perfect Marriage Union of Pleasure and Pain.

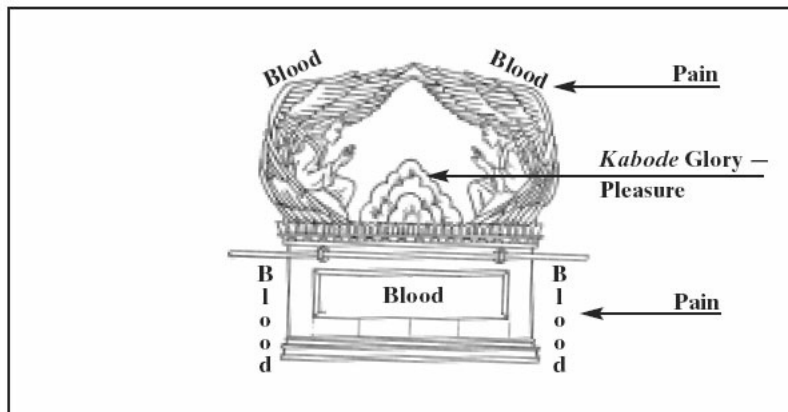
The ability to suffer long and, yet, delight in it is a great mystery to human beings. When we hurt, we feel everything but delight. However, we must bear in mind that the Devil stole some of the pleasure and pain from the Tree of Knowledge and carried it out in a mixed, confused form. Likewise, the Good and Evil that Adam-male and Adam-female carried outside the Garden were a strange, perverted mixture because it was mingled with sinful Darkness and Death. This explains why mankind never is completely happy, even when he has the Good in life. It also explains why he never can be satisfied when he gives himself to the Evil of pain. Consequently, poor, blind, rebellious mankind is not satisfied with God nor fallen Lucifer.

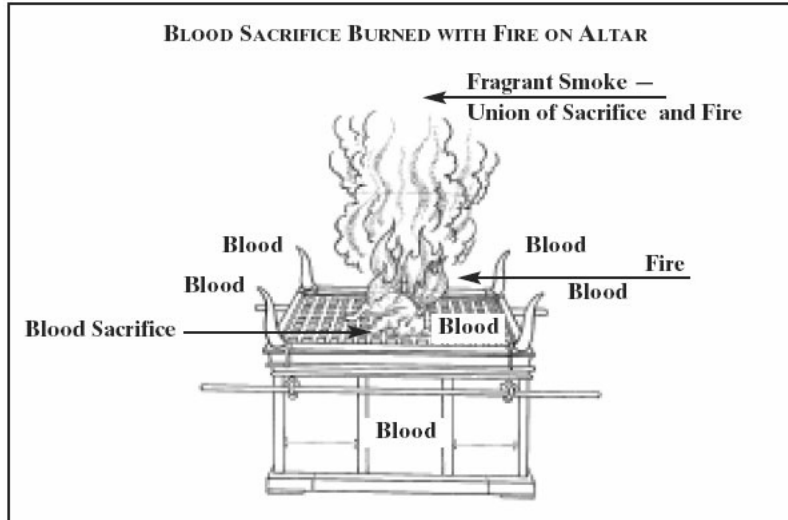
We all, at one time or another, have tried to find satisfaction with evil. It may seem shocking, but self-pity is a form of this class of gratification. Making oneself remember the hurts that have come to us is another way we seek satisfaction on the evil or suffering side. This is a form of perverted pleasure. The reason man seeks joy in suffering is that, in his subconscious heart and will, he is striving to make the Reality Principle of Pleasure and Pain work apart from God. However, because he does not realize that his Knowledge was stolen out of the Garden and mixed with sin, Darkness, and Death, he can feel no true satisfaction and no sense of completion. There always will be an unfulfilled void in man's heart until he willingly lets God fill the innermost part of his being.

There is no true, real satisfaction apart from the Will of God. People devote their lives to the pursuit of pleasure, trying in every way to by-pass pain; but it is impossible to avoid pain. The Tree of Knowledge is one Tree. Thus, people cannot eat of its pleasure without getting the pain, for pleasure stands in intricate union with pain. The Good and Evil are one Fruit.

Suffering started in Eternity with the complete, Self-existent God Who knows Good and Evil or Pleasure and Pain. He knew that it takes both pleasure and pain, joined together, to bring complete satisfaction.

The Marriage Union of Pleasure and Pain can be seen in shadow and type in the sacrificial blood on the Mercy Seat in the Holy of Holies in the Old Testament Tabernacle. The blood speaks of suffering, pain, and death. The Pleasure was in the *Kabode* Glory-Presence of God that abode upon the Mercy Seat between the two Cherubims.





Thus, we see the portrayal of the Principle of Pleasure-Built-upon-Pain. We see it illustrated, again, out in the Courtyard at the Brazen Altar. First, the blood of the sacrificed animal was applied there; then, the supernatural Fire from Heaven descended to consume the sacrificial animal and change it into smoke which ascended into the Nostrils of God as a sweet-smelling savour. Fragrance is a demonstration of Union. At the Brazen Altar, it was a demonstration of the Union of Pleasure and Pain.

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, **that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service** (Romans 12:1).

In the above verse, the Apostle Paul mentioned, directly, the very Principle pictured in the Courtyard of the Mosaic Tabernacle. How do we present our body to God? Certainly, it is something we must do personally; no one else can do it for us. Only we can willingly offer our whole being (body, soul, and spirit) to God as a living sacrifice — a sacrifice to be joined to God, whether it be through pleasure or pain. As a living sacrifice, we continually must be heaving up a fragrance of the union of pleasure and pain in our life to the LORD, through Christ Jesus.

There is a sense in which God never separates pleasure and pain, for they are as one in Him and in His Will. However, for better understanding, they are separated, just as the One God separated Himself into Father, Word joined to Son, and Holy Ghost for our better understanding of Him. We speak of mountains of exaltation (glory and pleasure) and valleys of humiliation (crucifixion and pain), and we experience our mountains and valleys separately as we go through this life. Yet, even when we are in a valley, the overshadowing pleasure of God's Good is there. And, when we are on a mountaintop of pleasure, exaltation, and glory are there, but so is there a cloud of pain over us in order to keep us from getting exalted above measure.

God is faithful to serve us pleasure and pain together. We cannot escape nor by-pass this Reality Principle. However, if we are to be a living sacrifice, we must surrender our will so that we can heave up a sweet Fragrance of Union in the midst of the pain and pleasure. There is one thing God does not *make* us do. He created us as free moral agents with the power of choice; therefore, God does not force us to become living sacrifices in the midst of pleasure and pain. He is faithful to serve us the combination of pleasure and pain, but we personally make the choice of what we will do with this gift.

During our earthly journey, we are more aware of the painful Cross of Crucifixion than we are of the Eternal Weight of Glory awaiting us. Yet, even now, when we get to the Cross with its pain and death, we are conscious of the LORD's overshadowing Presence of His Unbegotten Resurrection Glory which brings a great degree of pleasure in the midst of suffering. Since this "Cross-life" will be laid down before the LORD's Throne in the Day of Judgment, Christ Jesus' Pain will contribute its share in the midst of His Pleasure and Glory in the Day of Reward.

When God sets His Will before us, He presents the painful aspect first. We begin our journey at the Cross, but the ultimate Goal is Eternal Glory. (The Devil reverses the order, presenting his glitter and glamour to the sinner, first, while hiding the Eternal torment of God's Lake of Fire.) First, as penitent sinners, we experience Jesus' Will of Redemptive Understanding through the Cross. Next, He adds some of His Will of Revelation Wisdom. Then, we get

a taste of His Will of Satisfaction Knowledge. Yet, even while we are learning redemption, we experience some satisfaction, for God alternates our experiences.

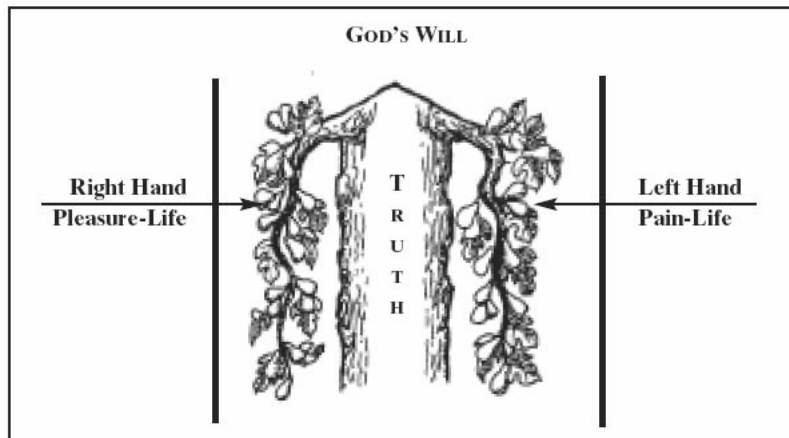
Although we have, in our spirit and soul, some of the glory that comes by being joined to Jesus' Will in pain and pleasure, the full glory is not yet visible because our body is not yet redeemed. Part of the glory is stored up, awaiting the resurrection of the body. On resurrection morning, our body shall know the fullness of the Father's Unbegotten Resurrection Glory in Christ Jesus.

For our **light affliction** [pain], which is but for a moment, **worketh for us a far more exceeding and eternal weight of glory** [pleasure]; (II Corinthians 4:17).

For I reckon that **the sufferings** [pain] **of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory** [pleasure] **which shall be revealed in us** (Romans 8:18).

When God's Unbegotten Glory joins our mortal body, it will be transformed into the Likeness and Image of the LORD Jesus Christ. God's Principle is unalterable! If we suffer with Him, we *will* reign with Him.

Had Adam and Eve taken God's Will of Redemption, Revelation, and Satisfaction in Jesus, they could have been made One with God; then, they could have entered into the Glory of His Satisfaction Will in Christ. In a Oneness of Relationship, man's will would have been like God's Will. In the middle of God's Will flows the River of Truth; in His Right Hand is Pleasure-Life, and in His Left Hand is Pain-Life.

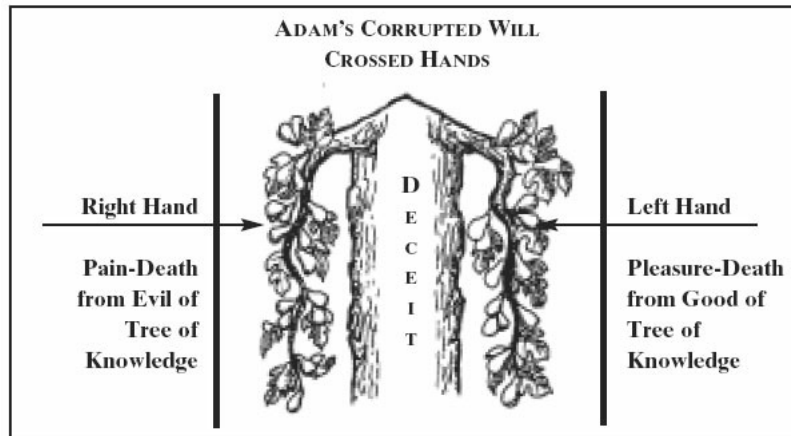


Unfortunately, Adam-male and Adam-female chose the perverted will of Lucifer. The portion of the Tree of Knowledge in them was confused with sin, Darkness, and Death. Down the middle of their human will flowed a River of Deceit. Instead of leaving God's Divine Order of pleasure in the right hand and pain in the left hand, they crossed their hands, calling pleasure *pain* and pain *pleasure*.

God pronounced His Judgmental Woes upon man's prideful changes of His Divine Orders.

Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter! Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight! (Isaiah 5:20,21).

(See drawing on following page.)



Adam and Eve came out of the Garden with crossed hands. They came out with Death — Pleasure-Death and Pain-Death.

It is no wonder that man's *little god* is in such a frustrated mental condition. He is trying to deny what he has inside of him. That is why it is possible to look at people who have given their lives in the pursuit of pleasure and see death on them. Pleasure-orientated businesses are flourishing today because the society as a whole is bent on creating its own world of pleasure. People have more to entertain themselves with than ever before, yet they are more miserable than ever before; therefore, they constantly seek new means of escape. They are miserable because they all have this Pleasure-Death inside their wills. When Pain-Death hits them, their misery becomes almost unbearable.

Although we all inherited a corrupted will which has its Pain and Pleasure Principle mixed with sin and Death, we do not have to live out our days in bondage to that will. We freely can choose to eat of Jesus Christ, the Tree of Life, and learn in humility to be fully dependent upon Him for our Life. Then, we come to Life that is filled with His Pleasure; and even in His Pain, we find more of His Resurrection Life.

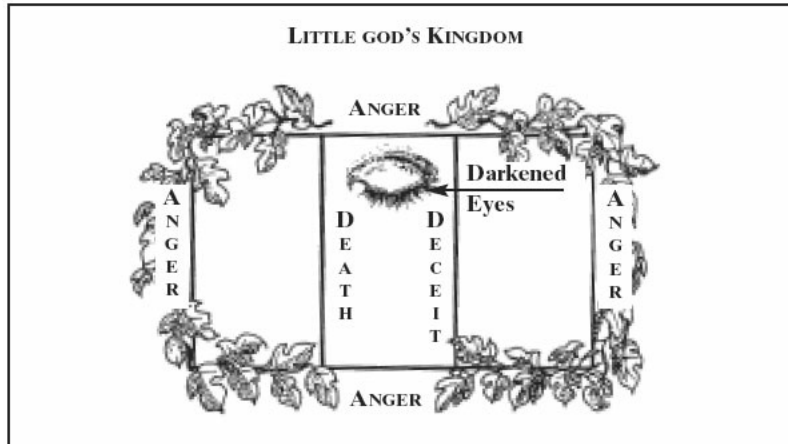
The Apostle Paul was witnessing to the Corinthians about his Pain-Life in Jesus Christ when he said, in so many words, "I was in the depths. I fasted. I was beaten. I was imprisoned.... But, Hallelujah! I came out of it all, filled with more of Christ's Resurrection Life" (II Corinthians 11:23-30). Although Paul was a faithful servant of the LORD, he could not escape the Reality Principle of Pleasure joined to Pain.

There is pain in life. But, pain in the Will of God produces Christ's Resurrection Life — not Death. The child of God who has learned the lesson of dependence on God, first, then the lesson of independence finds that "all *things* work together for good..." (Romans 8:28). He finds that there is pleasure, even in pain.

Exactly what was the Pleasure-Death and Pain-Death which Adam the First stole from the Tree of Knowledge? *It was stolen energy*. Sin is energy that has been abused and misused. Energy cannot be annihilated because it has its origin from God. Hence, it is aggressive power and force which must express itself in some way. Man's stolen energy expressed itself in the form of fig-leaf aprons. When they ate Fruit from the forbidden Tree, their eyes were opened to their inward nakedness; therefore, sinful fear was generated in their new kingdom. Because God was a threat to them as He walked in the Garden, their little *father-god* immediately went to work with his revelation, and their little *son-god* went to work with his redemption. They sewed fig leaves together into an apron (girdle or armour) which provided them with a way of defending themselves from the penetrating gaze of a Holy God. Adam's defensive armour was his sinful, guilty *anger*.

Every time man's little god syndrome finds his kingdom of pleasure threatened or contraried, man's stolen energy calls his sinful, guilty anger to assert itself to protect and redeem him.

Anger is one of the basic problems of life. It is the fleshly cudgel by which the little *son-god* seeks to redeem. This fleshly anger is described as the *works of the flesh* in Galatians 5:19-21. The club of our redemptive will is made up of hatred, wrath, strife, envy, and murder. Our little *father-god* projects his revelation will as idolatry, witchcraft, variance, emulations, seditions, and heresies. And, our little *spirit-god's* will of satisfaction seeks expression through adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, drunkenness, and revellings.



Man was given a sense or eye of reverential fear in his spirit so that he might worship and serve God, but that eye became blind, darkened, and clouded over with sin and Death. Now, man uses his eye of fear to reverence self and protect his little kingdom.

Fear enters our world through our little god syndrome. Until our *little god* is dethroned and Jesus Christ is exalted to His rightful position in our heart, we all live in constant, subconscious fear that our little *father-god*, little *son-god*, and little *spirit-god* will be toppled off the throne.

When *little god* is afraid, he involves our whole being. The mind speaks to the brain; then, the brain sends SOS signals to the adrenal gland which, in turn, sends emergency adrenaline to the muscles and nerves throughout the body. Great effort and energy are expended to help the *little god* save his kingdom.

The fear that arises from our little god syndrome drives us, makes us stammer, makes us grind our teeth, makes us rigid and tense, makes us forget. Fear makes us shake, sweat, freeze, burn, get indigestion, headaches, and countless other ailments. Many of our physical illnesses are our body's expressions of *little god's* fear of being displaced and dethroned.

By contrast, there is no sinful fear when God is seated on the throne of man's heart. There is no sinful fear of falling if a person does not have himself on a pedestal and if he is not trying to build himself a kingdom. Conversely, with God's Will joined to our will, there is only reverential fear that desires nothing but pleasing Him. Our life becomes a paradise when we accept the order that God originally intended for man. When we learn dependence upon the Tree of Life and learn to let God boss the affairs of our life, we find great rest, peace, and confidence. Then, we can eat of the Tree of Knowledge and all the other Trees that God planted to sustain us spiritually.

The Garden of Eden was an exceedingly fruitful and pleasant place. Adam-male and Adam-female got into trouble because they gave place to another creature in the Garden. The Serpent had no place there, but Adam-male and Adam-female, the keepers of the Garden, welcomed him into their world. That is what turned their paradise into a hell.

Once we have learned complete dependence on God for our Light and Life, we become independent of creatures, sin, Darkness, and Death. Our world becomes such a beautiful place that we would rather live in our paradise with God than with anyone else.

Here we see a paradox. First, we must work to get all other creatures out of the Garden of our heart and will so that they might be a true paradise for God's Word of Light and Life. Then, when we have known the beautiful Union and Oneness of Relationship with Jesus, the Tree of Life, and after we have learned to be satisfied completely without creatures, we have to surrender to invite those creatures back in so that we can share and minister the Word of God to them. When we reach this place in our spiritual growth, our little god syndrome stands up, again, to resist others coming into our world, for we become sinfully fearful lest they disturb our paradise. As a result, we have a whole new realm of carnal fear to conquer; thus, we have to come back and learn new lessons of dependence and independence in the Will of God.

Since the little god syndrome is the root of all our problems, it is a useless waste of time to chop away at the branches of the Tree when we can be dealing with the root. John the Baptist cried out in the wilderness, saying, "And now also the axe is laid unto the root of the trees:..." (Luke 3:9).

As long as we carry the thought that we are a little god, we must continue to suffer the consequences. But, once we are aware of our problem, we can begin to work toward a cure. That cure is the LORD Jesus Christ. He will expose our little god syndrome. As we confess our abuse and misuse of His precious Life's Energy, His Blood can cleanse and transform it into Righteous Energy which we can use to serve the LORD and do His Will in a better way.

In this chapter, we have seen sin's legacy that was passed down to the entire human race. Through the disobedience and sin of Adam the First, we all are born with the little god syndrome. We all have sin-darkened eyes which never can see correctly. We all are independent when we should be dependent, and we are dependent when we should be independent. We all have Pleasure-Death and Pain-Death reigning in our life. We all are clothed with a fig-leaf apron of anger which we use to defend and protect our little kingdom.

Now that we understand that we all have a little god who is very angry, we are ready to examine the Tree of Anger as it grows in all human beings' hearts.

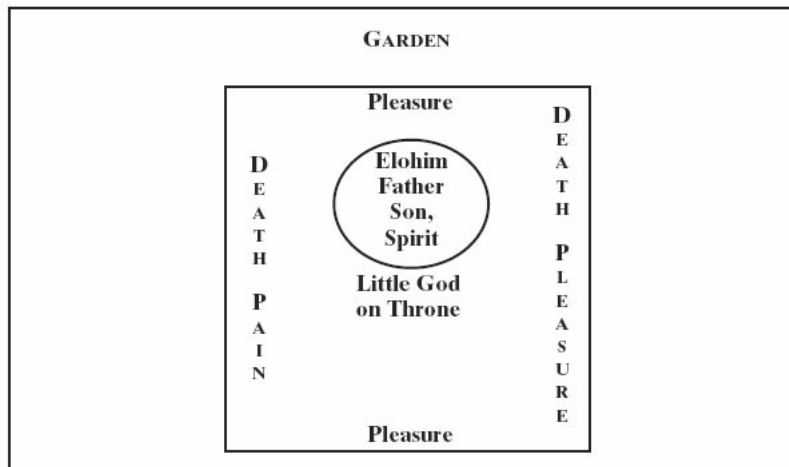
---

\* B. R. Hicks, *The Song of Love...From The Song Of Solomon* (Jeffersonville, Indiana: Christ Gospel Churches Int'l., Inc., 1966).

## Chapter Seven

### Man's Fig Leaves Of Anger

When Adam the First received the corrupted will of fallen Lucifer, he accepted the lie that Lucifer propagated — the lie that said “*Ye shall be as gods.*” Adam-male and Adam-female believed they would be a *father-god* with revelation power, a *son-god* with redemptive power, and a *spirit-god* with the power of satisfaction. This little god syndrome is the beginning of man's troubles. From the Garden, *little god* set out to create his own world of pleasure, determined to change all pain in his creation into pleasure.



Adam-male and Adam-female's sin of disobedience to God filled their hearts with fear. Afraid that God would see the nakedness of their wills, they sewed together their own girdles of protective armour; this fig-leaf armour was sown with the threads of their sinful anger and guilt. Their eye of fear was filled, not with the light of reverential fear toward God, but with the Darkness and Death of tormenting fear lest they lose their little god syndrome and their little kingdom of pleasure of being gods.

It is this fear that produces anger. Man becomes angry when he is afraid he will be put down; or he will not get what he wants; or things will not go to suit him. Anger is man's defense. His fig leaves of covering and protection show that his little god syndrome is working to defend his own will and way.

Little god is determined to create a world of pleasure for himself, but he constantly is frustrated as he carries within his will the Pleasure-Death Principle that was the result of the stolen energy he took from the forbidden Tree of Knowledge.

Sin is stolen aggressive energy which cannot be destroyed. It must go somewhere. With our progenitor, Adam the First, sin began to express itself through agitation and displeasure when God walked into the Garden. Fearful and angry, Adam began to build himself a stairway downward, for angry, aggressive energy continues to intensify and deepen if it is not dealt with in the seed stage.

Anger is the communication of feelings and thoughts that are displeasing to us. Whenever something crosses us, we feel displeasure and agitation come up inside us. If we fail to deal with it immediately, our little god syndrome goes into action. Little adult or father-god, little son-god, and little parent or spirit-god work through the darkened eyes of the human will to bring us to indignation, the next downward step in the development of anger. We feel angry because someone has had the audacity to introduce a little pain into our world of pleasure.

Anger starts as a little bubble rising to the surface. However, it quickly grows into indignation. On this step, little father-god tells us, “This is unjust. It is unfair. What a shame! After all, you are a little god, and as such, you deserve better treatment than you are getting.”

Anger does not stop with indignation. The next downward step is rage. From rage, we step down to fury and, then, down to wrath.

The first two stages of anger are invisible to everyone but us. Other people cannot see when our little god feels the first bubble of agitation or even the second one of indignation. Since we do not realize the seriousness of anger, we usually let the displeasure bubble on. The more it bubbles, the more the mind and the eyes of the will swing into operation. While anger is in its beginning stages, we seldom mention it to anyone because the eyes of resemblance, appearance, and conceit within the human will like to project a saintly image to others. We are determined, at this point, to keep our angry feelings to ourself.

Meanwhile, the stolen aggressive energy builds up pressure inside. Agitation becomes indignation, and, later, indignation works itself down to the stage of rage. When rage takes over, it expresses itself in outbursts; this stage of anger is marked by lack of self-control. Although we may have every intention of keeping quiet about things that enrage us, there is no holding our anger in check when it reaches the rage stage. One part of our little god syndrome says, “I am going to be god. I am going to control this anger.” Then, the son-part of our little god syndrome steps in to redeem the situation by loosing our inner rage and letting it burst forth. Our little father-god has no control over our little son-god. There is no unity within our own carnal godhead.

Corrupt energy in the rage stage of anger is destructive. Its aggressive force will vent itself in one of two ways: inwardly or outwardly. Sometimes rage is unleashed inwardly against a person’s own physical body, which causes all kind of problems and pain. For instance, many headaches, indigestion, tension pains, arthritis, and ulcers are caused by rage-anger working within the body. Other times the aggressive energy of rage-anger vents itself outwardly in terrible emotional outbursts. The trouble is that the outburst comes against whoever happens to be nearby at the moment. The provocation may be slight, but it takes very little to trip our trigger and bring on a fit of rage. When rage spues out, it leaves the innocent victim in a state of shock, who can only wonder, “What on earth brought on that eruption?”

From the rage stage, anger becomes fury. Furious anger is overwhelming madness which enables people to do and say things they do not remember later. This burning, blazing, fury-anger is so emotion packed that the person literally is drunk with the thing. A person actually can kill when he is in the fury state. But, when he comes to his senses, he may have no memory of what transpired while he was under the inebriating influence of fury. Fury-anger is the blinding madness stage of no sensible control.

Then comes the wrath stage, which is anger’s vengeful stage. Literal murder is committed in the fury stage. The desire to commit murder also assumes a more deceitful form. By plotting revenge, wrath kills the reputation, influence, and determination of others.

Let us pause here to see a few Scriptures relating to each of these degrees of anger.

### Anger Stage

Until **thy brother’s anger** turn away from thee, and he forget that which thou hast done to him: then I will send, and fetch thee from thence: why should I be deprived also of you both in one day? (Genesis 27:45).

(For the LORD thy God is a jealous God among you) lest the **anger of the LORD** thy God be kindled against thee, and destroy thee from off the face of the earth (Deuteronomy 6:15).

**Be ye angry, and sin not:** let not the sun go down upon your wrath: (Ephesians 4:26).

### Indignation Stage

Then went Haman forth that day joyful and with a glad heart: but when Haman saw Mordecai in the king’s gate, that he stood not up, nor moved for him, **he was full of indignation** against Mordecai (Esther 5:9).

Pour out **thine indignation upon them**, and let thy wrathful anger take hold of them (Psalm 69:24).

But when his disciples saw it, **they had indignation**, saying, To what purpose is this waste? (Matthew 26:8)

### Rage Stage

Are not Abana and Pharpar, rivers of Damascus, better than all the waters of Israel? may I not wash in them, and be clean? So **he turned and went away in a rage** (II Kings 5:12).

But I know thy abode, and thy going out, and thy coming in, and **thy rage against me**. Because *thy rage against me* and thy tumult is come up into mine ears, therefore I will put my hook in thy nose, and my bridle in thy lips, and I will turn thee back by the way by which thou camest (II Kings 19:27,28).

For **jealousy is the rage of a man**: therefore he will not spare in the day of vengeance (Proverbs 6:34).

A wise man feareth, and departeth from evil: but **the fool rageth**, and is confident (Proverbs 14:16).

**He swalloweth the ground with fierceness and rage**: neither believeth he that it is the sound of the trumpet (Job 39:24).

Cast abroad **the rage of thy wrath**: and behold every one that is proud, and abase him (Job 40:11).

Why do **the heathen rage**, and the people imagine a vain thing? (Psalm 2:1).

### Fury Stage

And tarry with him a few days, **until thy brother's fury turn away**; (Genesis 27:44).

Then **I will walk contrary unto you also in fury**; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your sins (Leviticus 26:28).

When he is about to fill his belly, **God shall cast the fury of his wrath upon him**, and shall rain it upon him while he is eating (Job 20:23).

Therefore **he hath poured upon the fury of his anger**, and the strength of battle: and it hath set him on fire round about, yet he knew not; and it burned him, yet he laid it not to heart (Isaiah 42:25).

Circumcise yourselves to the LORD, and take away the foreskins of your heart, ye men of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem: **lest my fury come forth like fire**, and burn that none can quench it, because of the evil of your doings (Jeremiah 4:4).

Therefore **I am full of the fury of the LORD**; I am weary with holding it: I will pour it out upon the children abroad, and upon the assembly of young men together: for even the husband with the wife shall be taken, the aged with him that is full of days (Jeremiah 6:11).

### Wrath Stage

But unto Cain and to his offering he had not respect. And **Cain was very wroth**, and his countenance fell. And the LORD said unto Cain, Why art thou wroth? and why is thy countenance fallen? (Genesis 4:5,6).

And **Jacob was wroth**, and chode with Laban: and Jacob answered and said to Laban, What is my trespass? what is my sin, that thou hast so hotly pursued after me? (Genesis 31:36).

But **Naaman was wroth**, and went away, and said, Behold, I thought, He will surely come out to me, and stand, and call on the name of the LORD his God, and strike his hand over the place, and recover the leper (II Kings 5:11).

Then **Asa was wroth with the seer**, and put him in a prison house; for he was in a rage with him because of this thing. And Asa oppressed some of the people the same time (II Chronicles 16:10).

Notwithstanding they hearkened not unto Moses; but some of them left of it until the morning, and it bred worms, and stank: and **Moses was wroth with them** (Exodus 16:20).

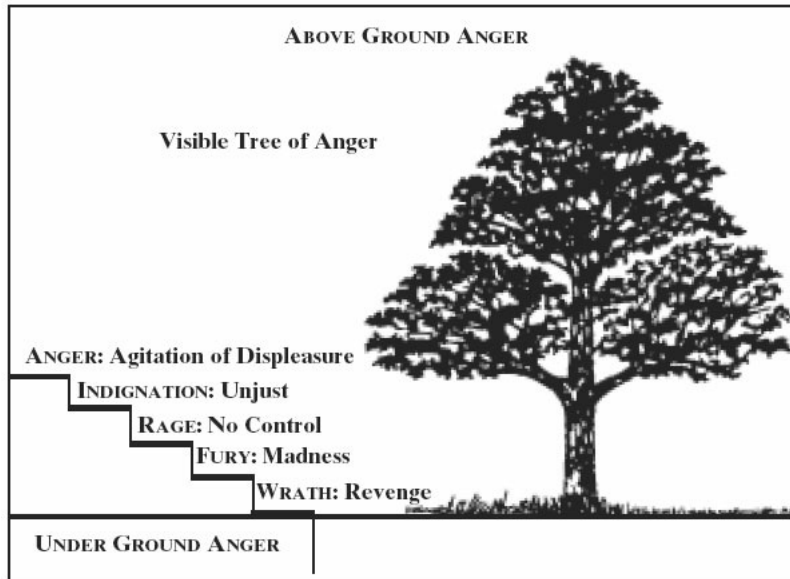
And **Moses was very wroth**, and said unto the LORD, Respect not thou their offering: I have not taken one ass from them, neither have I hurt one of them (Numbers 16:15).

For they provoked him to anger with their high places, and moved him to jealousy with their graven images. **When God heard this, he was wroth**, and greatly abhorred Israel:... **He gave his people over also unto the sword; and was wroth with his inheritance** (Psalm 78:58,59,62).

But **the LORD was wroth with me** for your sakes, and would not hear me: and the LORD said unto me, Let it suffice thee; speak no more unto me of this matter (Deuteronomy 3:26).

In these Scriptures, we have seen the various degrees of sinful anger manifested in the lives of many persons, as well as Holy Anger in God Himself. As we continue to study, we shall see that not all anger is corrupt and destructive energy; there are situations and occasions in which it is righteous and just to be angry.

Sinful anger begins with a feeling of sinful agitation, but the longer we fail to deal with it and rid ourself of it, the more violent it becomes. If we fail to rid ourself of anger, either through repentance and confession or through the demonstration of it (that is, acknowledging it and not freezing it because we are too proud to admit we are angry), it finally works its way down into the realm of hidden, invisible, and deceitful anger.



Anger is a mighty tree that grows in the hearts and wills of the human family. Everyone has a Tree of Anger, although some people have cultivated and developed certain aspects of it more than others.

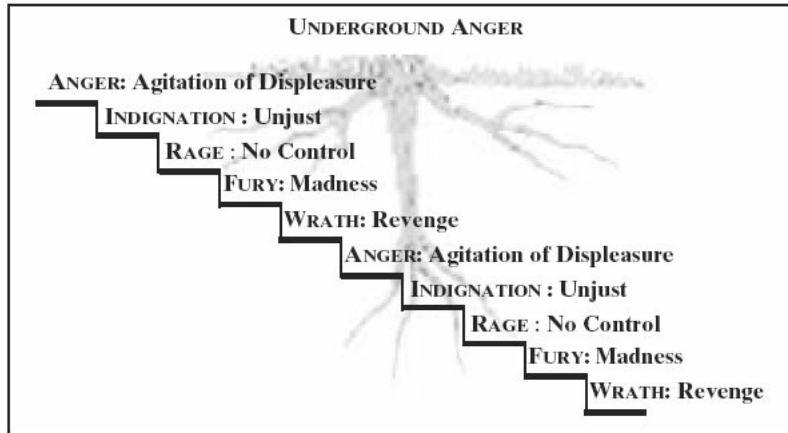
Thus far, we have been looking at the *aboveground* part of the tree. This is visible anger, clearly seen and manifested to us and to others. Aboveground anger is hot. However, Anger does not stop with hot, aboveground manifestations. As it continues unchecked, unabated, unconfessed, and ignored, it moves underground into the invisible realm where it becomes cold frozen anger.

The Principle of Hot and Cold is found in God Himself. His very Breath is a combination of Hot and Cold (Psalm 18:12,13). This Key Spiritual Principle identifies many expressions of God's Exaltation and Humiliation, which relate to Hot and Cold. The terms *day and night, in and out, light and darkness* are all related, contrasting experiences of the Hot and Cold Principle found in God.

It is little wonder, then, that in man's emotional makeup and will there are these same two capacities: one for hot anger (visible) and one for cold frozen anger (invisible). Aspects of God's Hot Will and His Cold Frozen Will are parts of what Satan stole from God and changed into corrupted and abused energy.

Anger does not stop until it destroys. We read of sadistic murders in which victims have been tortured and realize that it is more than just the desire to kill that pushes a human being to commit such atrocities against another human being. Hot, furious anger and vengeful anger strike out in totally irrational manners; but tortuous murders come out of the release of pent-up and frozen anger — perhaps from the accumulation of a lifetime.

Energy, stored in a frozen ice-form for long periods of time, becomes a flood upon the introduction of heat. Naturally speaking, a sudden thaw releases ice-energy in powerful quantities, causing a flood to flow forth in a fearful, destructive force. The same thing often happens when frozen anger violently erupts. When a spark of anger starts burning in the visible realm, it starts melting invisible anger which has been frozen for a long time until, suddenly, the energy of the anger is released in all its fury.



Cold, frozen anger belongs to the invisible part of the Tree of Anger. It is in the underground, subconscious part of man's being or unconscious will. As anger travels further down inside man's heart and conscious, subconscious, and unconscious will, it assumes more deceitful forms. It can be pressed down into the subconscious and unconscious realms of our will until we are totally unaware of its existence. Something must trigger it before it is released into the conscious realm again.

Dreams sometimes trigger our awareness of the presence of anger deep inside us. For example, once some acquaintance of mine had displeased me for some reason, which I had forgotten, but my displeasure grew within me until it had reached the wrathful stage. However, being the good Christian I thought I was, I certainly was not going to do anything overtly violent to her. For a while, I apparently had succeeded in pushing my anger down into my frozen cesspool, and I had forgotten it was there until, one night, I had a vivid dream in which I started beating this woman with a broom. At last, she fell on her bed, but I continued beating her. It was as though I could not be satisfied with my punishment of her. In my dream, it seemed that I already had killed her, but I kept beating her as though I never could hurt her to a degree that would satisfy my anger.

Because my self-righteous pride would not acknowledge the wrathful anger I had felt, I had pushed it down into the subconscious and unconscious parts of my being or will where it lay in a frozen state for a long while — long enough for me to have forgotten the entire affair. But, God is always faithful to expose us. This time, He had used a dream to expose my anger for what it really was. I really had wanted to beat that woman to death.

Many of the hidden and frozen angers down in the cesspool of our subconscious and unconscious realms of our being go back to the days of our early childhood. Only God can expose and reveal these long-forgotten, frozen angry feelings so that we can repent and confess them and be cleansed from them by the Blood of Jesus Christ, the Power of His Holy Name, and the Fire of His Father's Unbegotten Resurrection Glory.

The subconscious and unconscious parts of man need cleansing as well as his conscious being, for the subconscious and unconscious realms control and influence the entire personality or being of man, even as the roots of a tree manifests themselves through the visible tree that grows aboveground.

We can compare the subconscious and unconscious parts of man's sinful will to a large, frozen cesspool of anger, filled with frozen wrath. When we lash out in sudden wrath, which is totally out of proportion to the offense, it is because there has been the sudden release of a particular block of frozen anger out of the cesspool in the depths of our subconsciousness and unconsciousness. We all have this frozen storehouse of destructive anger developed within us to one degree or another, depending on our inheritance, environment, and experiences.

In this chapter we learned that anger is man's self-defense. Anger is man's little son-god syndrome working to protect his little pleasure kingdom. With these introductory thoughts, we now are ready to look more closely at man's Tree of Anger as it manifests itself in both the visible and invisible realms of his life.

# Chapter Eight

## Visible Aboveground Anger

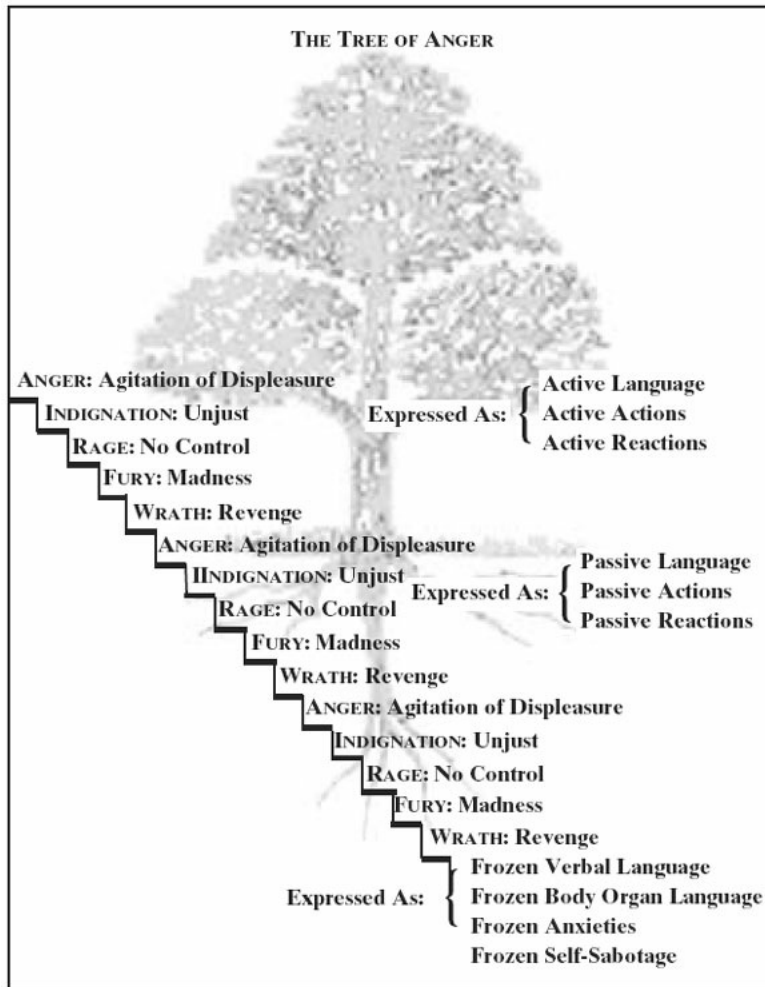
Aboveground anger is the clearly visible part of our Tree of Anger. However, the greater part of our Tree of Anger is invisible, hidden beneath the ground in the subconscious and unconscious parts of our being or will.

We easily can differentiate between our two realms of anger by using the terms *hot* and *cold*. When anger is released, openly, showing itself visibly for what it really is, it is related to the hot class of anger. Unpleasant as hot anger is, it is much easier to deal with than cold frozen anger. Anger that is submerged and frozen in the subconscious and unconscious parts of our being or will becomes a deceitful and hidden thing.

Hot, visible anger is, by nature, frank, straight, and direct to the point. Confession and repentance must be made for all anger, and since half the battle of overcoming is being able to see and understand, hot anger, because it is so evident, is relatively easy to discern and take to the Blood of Jesus Christ.

Visible, aboveground anger expresses itself in three distinct forms: (A) frank verbal language; (B) frank visible actions; and (C) frank visible reactions.

(See drawing on following page.)



### A. Frank Verbal Language

Frank verbal language is very common anger, which causes us to speak our thoughts and feelings outright. Words are vehicles which transport thoughts; therefore, when we are angry, it usually is seen and heard through the things we say. Our open overflow is the oneness activity of all the eyes of our will, spirit, soul, and body communicating feelings of anger.

When we speak out our anger, little god sits on the throne, feeling so pleased with himself, saying, “I really told them off. I proved that I am god all over again.” After awhile, however, he does not feel so good in his little false paradise. He discovers that there is a bit of “hell” around there too. It is no wonder that God said our tongue was set on fire of Hell, turning loose all kinds of misery, affliction, and destructive energy.

Other people usually get the first clue of our displeasure when our angry and indignant thoughts reach the rage stage and erupt into words. We speak out what we feel in a direct, frank, and straightforward manner. This is visible, hot anger; everyone within hearing distance knows that we are angry.

Frank verbal anger says, “I’m furious. I’ll wring your neck. I hate you. I could kill you.” This aggressive energy cannot be forgotten nor destroyed. Either it will be confessed and repented of and converted into Righteous Energy through the cleansing Power of the Blood of Jesus Christ, or it will continue working its way downward, intensifying as it goes.

As it works its way downward, corrupt, aggressive energy moves from *anger* to *indignation*, to *rage*, to *fury*, and, then, to *wrath*. From that point, it has no other place to go in the conscious realm; it has to descend into the realm of cold frozen anger, moving down into the root system of the tree — into the subconscious and unconscious parts of

man's being or will.

All of man's angry, frank verbal language comes out because his little god syndrome is feeling displeasure and agitation over being contraried in some way.

### **B. Frank Visible Actions**

When words no longer can appease and fully satisfy hot anger, it takes the form of frank visible actions. This is when anger strikes out to hit somebody or kick something. Some people throw things, smashing them into a handful of useless pieces. Their angry energy becomes more explosive in this stage and must demonstrate itself in some energetic, violent actions. Individuals may burst into tears or have a temper tantrum at this point. These visible actions have a destructive nature even when they come out in the form of tears, for the anger is then turned against the individuals themselves.

Little children often express their anger by kicking and screaming, smashing their toys, throwing things, or releasing their destructive emotions in some equally evident fashion.

Adults do the same thing, although they usually try to be less obvious about it. When a husband and wife become angry with each other, their anger can be released in many forms. The wife, for instance, frequently turns to incessant nagging. With her angry tongue, she really is hitting out at her husband. Instead of just complaining about his nagging wife, the husband should start searching his own heart to see what he has said or done to anger his wife. Hitting, nagging, crying, threatening, browbeating, bullying, terrorizing, hot-headedness — all these actions are forms of visible anger.

### **C. Frank Visible Reactions**

To *react* is to *redo* or do over again what someone else has done to us. Our anger is reacting to what another person has said or done. Perhaps the other person is just teasing, but we overreact by stomping out of the room and slamming the door behind us. We are reacting when we throw a book or some other object. Then, again, poor little Fido may be the one who gets the brunt of our angry reactions. When we are reacting angrily to some situation in the office, for example, Fido may get a kick instead of a loving pat on the head. We are not angry with the dog; we just cannot kick our boss, the person who is making us angry, and keep our job; so, we take our anger out on the dog.

Slamming doors, throwing books, and kicking dogs are all examples of visible *reactions* to someone else's anger. If we could just remember that the other person's anger is coming out of his fear that his little god syndrome is threatened in some way, we would have less problems with overreacting.

People use anger to terrorize others. Anger is the flesh's way of saying, "I just dare you to try to get me off my throne." We think that if we frighten other people enough they will not threaten our position on the throne and intrude into our little universe. But, everyone has the same little god syndrome, the same throne and universe to protect, and the same headship to assert; therefore, everyone reacts to visible anger in one way or another.

We react in various ways. Sometimes we take out our anger on someone else by making them the scapegoat. That is what Adam-male did when he blamed his wife. Then, Adam-female reacted to Adam-male's accusation by placing the blame for her sin on the Serpent.

Sometimes we react to anger by twisting the truth in order to make others feel sorry for us. Or, we may dilute the truth until it no longer has the appearance of the original. Of course, the twisting and the diluting of truth always is done so that things will work in our favour.

From the foregoing description of aboveground anger, we understand that its nature is visible and clearly manifested. The first two steps — anger and indignation — can be covered so that only we are aware of their presence. However, from that point on, anger progresses into rage, fury, and wrath, and these last three steps are obvious to all. Yet, in spite of the enormity of aboveground anger, not all the destructive and aggressive energy of anger is released in a visible fashion.

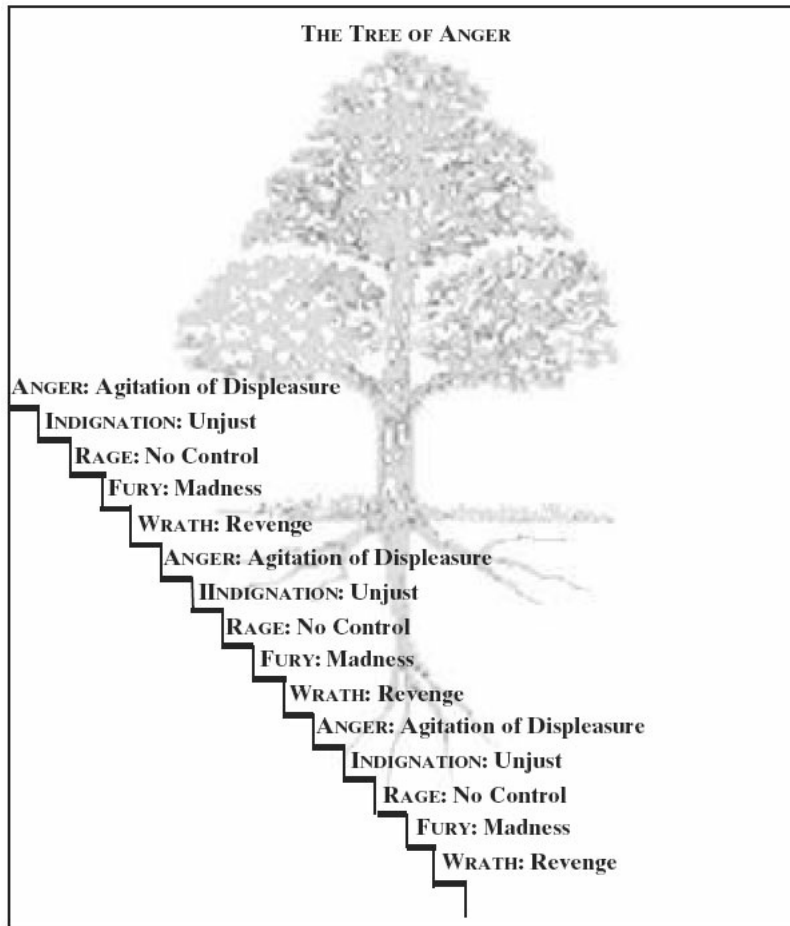
We have various reasons for resisting the expression of our anger in the visible realm. People sometimes consider themselves too good or too saintly to be angry. Their upbringing, their present spiritual status, or perhaps the lack of fortitude for fighting make them feel too guilty to demonstrate their inner feelings of anger. It is then that anger is shoved down into the subconscious and unconscious realms where it becomes more subtle and deceitful. We can tell when anger is being pushed down because we deny its existence. "I really am not mad at that person. I really do not

feel angry at all.” So, the anger, indignation, rage, fury, and wrath are shoved down below ground into the invisible or the subconscious or unconscious realms.

We live in a world full of people who are suppressing their anger, as evidenced by the large quantities of sedatives, tranquilizers, and sleeping pills they consume. Anger is a very destructive force, and people get into serious trouble because they do not know how to deal with their anger. What a beautiful life we could have if we would just learn how to handle the pleasure-death and pain-death which we inherited through the sin of Adam the First.

In this chapter, we have seen the five basic steps which anger takes as it grows in its visible, aboveground form. Anger begins with a bubble of agitation of displeasure and quickly increases into indignation which accuses God and others of being unjust and unfair. Indignation bursts forth into the rage stage where all control is lost. Rage blazes into fury which is a state of irrational madness. Fury matures into wrath which behaves in revengeful, destructive ways.

(See drawing on following page.)



The progressive development of visible anger is active by nature, so to see aboveground anger being expressed in active ways is no surprise. Visible, aboveground anger speaks out in frank verbal language. Words are followed by active frank visible actions, which strike out in an explosive fashion. These actions produce active frank visible reactions, which transfer the blame and guilt of anger onto others.

As we leave the visible realm and go on to view the underground portion of the Tree of Anger, we will see a continual intensification of anger as we descend deeper and deeper into each level of the invisible realms of man's being or will. Remember, too, that each of the basic steps of anger (anger, indignation, rage, fury, and wrath) strengthens the power of anger, for we will be seeing these five steps repeated several times on our way down to the frozen cesspool of anger.

## **Chapter Nine**

### **Invisible Underground Anger**

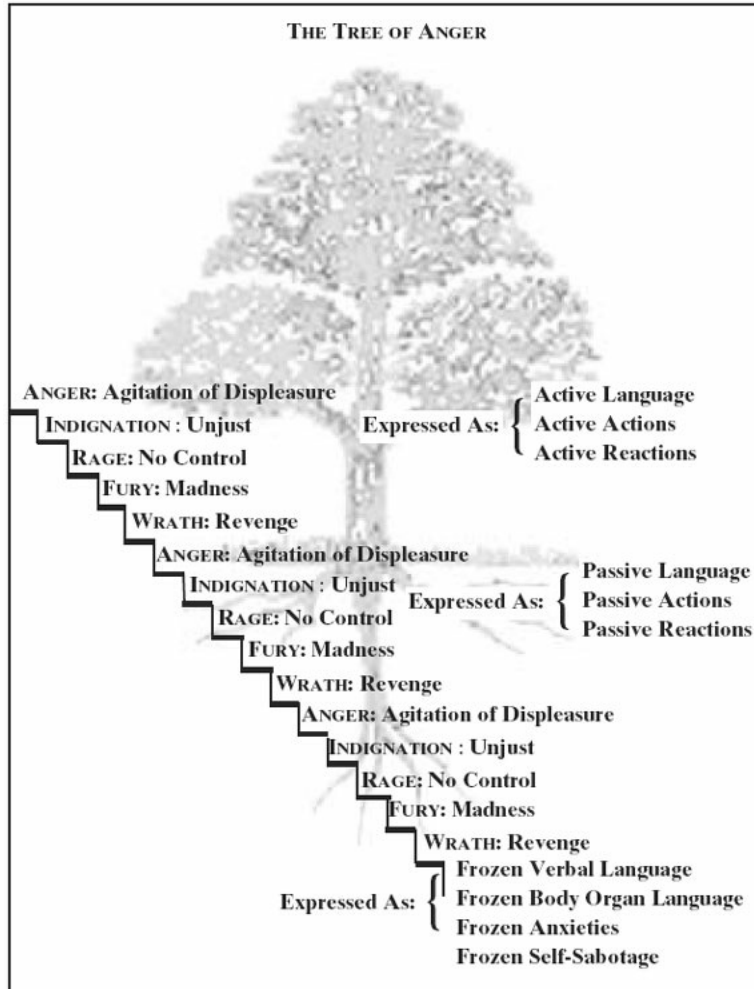
The fastest growing part of a natural tree is hidden in the dark, damp earth. Roots are longer and usually have more “branches” than the branches and twigs that grow upon the visible part of the tree. Roots collect water in the damp ground and send it up the trunk to the leaves. Roots also serve as an anchor to hold the tree in an upright position. The root system of a natural tree gives a picture of the importance of the invisible part of the Tree of Anger growing in the human heart.

Anger becomes increasingly difficult to deal with as it progresses further down into the subconscious and unconscious parts of man’s being or will. There are three major degrees or levels of invisible anger: (A) moderate passive anger; (B) secondary passive anger; and (C) frozen-cesspool passive anger. This tremendous and extensive root system supports and nourishes the visible above-ground Tree of Anger.

The same five steps seen in the progressive development of visible anger are seen in each of the three invisible areas of anger. Man descends into moderate passive anger on the steps of anger, indignation, rage, fury, and wrath. These very same steps offer him support as he slips into secondary passive anger, and they are there to take him on down into the unconscious frozen-cesspool of passive anger where the energy comes to full birth in its hidden, frozen form.

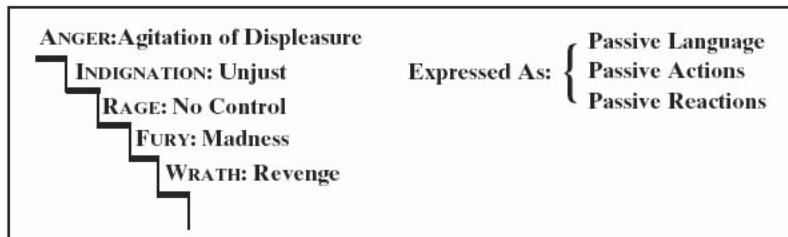
Anger is one of man’s most vital energies; it also is one of his most abused and perverted energies. Think of how much wasted and misused energy is expended through anger. Without a doubt, the greater portion of many people’s lives is expended while they are in the grip of anger, to one degree or another.

By examining the various degrees of invisible anger, we can discern the workings of anger which have reached down into the subconscious and unconscious levels of our own heart and will.



### A. Moderate Passive Anger (Invisible)

The first class of roots or the first realm of invisible anger is called moderate passive anger. Anger in this stage follows the same basic pattern that we saw in the visible stage of the growth of anger. Passive, invisible anger still expresses itself in our language, actions, and reactions; however, it becomes more difficult to recognize because its nature changes from being active to being passive; therefore, it is more deceitful in the way it works.



#### 1. Moderate Passive Verbal Language

When anger moves underground, people stop calling it anger. Instead of acknowledging, “I am mad. I hate that person. I could kill him,” they press anger down into the invisible recesses of their hearts and wills and begin to change and dilute it. They express moderate, passive verbal anger by saying, “I am fed up. I am sick and tired of it. I am ready to explode. You make me laugh.”

Sometimes people are too saintly or self-righteous to admit their true feelings, and other times they refuse to face the painful Reality Principle and the repercussions of declaring their anger. Whatever the reason, they seek escape by pushing their angry feelings down into the invisible realm. Rather than confessing their anger and repenting of it, they dress it up in a nice vocabulary so that they can continue being angry while maintaining a composed image in the sight of others.

At this point, anger is less bold, less overflowing, and less evident than it was in the visible stage. It begins to disappear slowly, sinking down into the subconscious realm, where it finally sinks into the unconscious frozen cesspool; there it exists in a completely hidden or frozen state.

## **2. Moderate Passive Actions**

The actions of invisible anger are more subtle and refined than those of visible anger. Rudeness comes under the category of moderate passive actions. Sometimes people are rude to those who are being nice to them. Actually, they usually are angry at someone else and are taking their anger out on some innocent bystander. The fellow who receives rude treatment generally reacts with anger. Then, in turn, he takes his anger out on the next person he sees. A great chain reaction results from the misused and abused energy of man's anger.

Sometimes people are haughty and arrogant toward others. Their actions imply, "Who does that person think he is anyway? He is a nobody." This is just another form of the moderate passive actions of anger in the invisible realm. The Truth is that they are angry, but they do not want others to know it. Afraid that they will be exposed, they strut their exaggerated dignity as a cover-up for their invisible anger because, somewhere and sometime, someone pushed them down to the low place, making them feel humiliated and ashamed. People who are overbearing toward others simply are expressing their invisible anger. They are making someone else a scapegoat for their own inferiority because of guilt and shame.

Consistently negative individuals are angry. Regardless of what position one takes with them, they always jump to the opposite side, determined to differ with everyone. In reality, they are seething with invisible frozen anger and unconsciously looking for a fight as a means of self-justification over their being angry. They really want the other fellow to be on the opposite side of the fence, for in their subconscious minds they are identifying everyone else with the real object of their anger. When they win an argument, in their minds, they are winning over their real adversary (the other person), not dreaming their anger is their real adversary. They are unaware of these inner workings, however, because of the deceitfulness of invisible frozen anger.

Ministers often meet negative-thinking people in their counsel sessions. They are the ones who refuse every suggestion, regardless of how helpful it may be, saying, "Oh, that would not work. I already have tried that." Their problem is that they have frozen anger at someone or something. The frozen anger, which they are displaying, may be an old anger that dates back to childhood; nevertheless, since anger is aggressive energy which must be expressed, it matters little how old the anger is now that it is in the invisible frozen realm. Frozen anger must be dealt with, or it will destroy its owner. Whatever is in the invisible root system of the Tree of Anger will assert itself and work itself out through individuals' lives, just as what is in the roots of a natural tree is manifested in its branches, leaves, and fruits.

The passive actions of moderate, invisible anger also take the form of scorning, mocking, and jeering. When we run into people who are contemptuous in their relationship with others, we usually withdraw from them if at all possible. We can give them merciful understanding, however, if we remember the source of their trouble. They are evidencing the moderate passive anger which smolders invisibly within them, and this contempt actually is their defense mechanism against the threat of other human beings' bringing more pain to them. They are fearful lest their little god and his throne be threatened.

## **3. Moderate Passive Reactions**

In the moderate stage of invisible passive anger, individuals first begin modifying anger by soft-pedaling it. They no longer call it anger but have many nicer names for it.

People's little god on the throne is right there to justify them. In the moderate stage, their actions become more deceptive in that they cannot easily recognize them as the workings of suppressed anger. Their moderate passive reactions move along in the same way. They use all kinds of excuses to cover up their true motives and the cause.

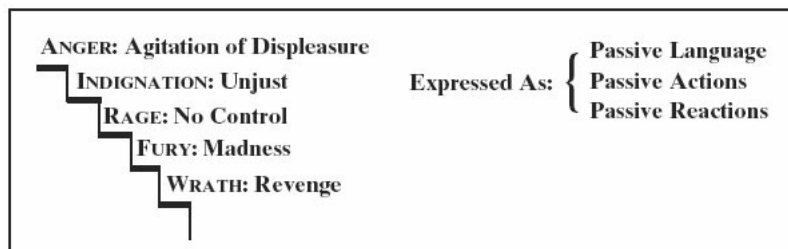
In this realm of invisible anger, people frequently are what is known as *accident-prone*. Instead of acting out their anger by punching someone in the nose, they may run into something, stub their toe, break a leg, or back their car into a pole. Many accidents happen because of invisible frozen anger. It is this realm of anger that sometimes causes people not to see straight and to be poorly coordinated. Because they are reacting with irritation and impatience, they have all manner of things go wrong all through the day. It is because frozen anger is at work again.

In the moderate passive stage of invisible anger, people disguise their emotions by using a more acceptable language for conveying their feelings. Likewise, their actions and reactions are changed until others and they themselves fail to recognize them as stemming from anger.

This new terminology and behaviour is so much more palatable to the mind that believers see no need to repent and confess their anger to God. They do not see anger as the sin it really is. When people self-righteously suppress visible anger down into the invisible realm of their beings and wills, they think they have done away with it. However, they are mistaken. They simply have modified angry energy, making a way for it to descend into a deeper level of the root system of the Tree of Anger.

## B. Secondary Passive Anger (Invisible)

The second class of the roots of invisible anger is called secondary passive anger. People go down into this realm on the stairway of anger, indignation, rage, fury, and wrath, and here, again, anger is expressed in a person's language, actions, and reactions.



The secondary passive stage of invisible anger brings people closer to complete denial. The blinded eyes of the human will are very active on this level, denying, twisting, perverting, and making crooked all of a person's feelings so that he neither recognizes nor discerns his true nature. Self-deception reigns in this depth of frozen anger.

### 1. Secondary Passive Verbal Language

Finding the roots of the Tree of Anger is like digging down into a deep hole. In this greatly darkened depth of the subconscious and unconscious parts of man's being and will, we see the invisible verbal anger taking on a far greater degree of passivity. Now, instead of saying, "I am fed up. I am sick and tired," people say, "I am hurt. I am disgusted. I am depressed. I am under such great pressure." We now are far removed from the very suggestion of anger.

We realize, of course, that people can get under great work loads from time to time; then, they are justified in saying they are under pressure. However, very few people carry extremely heavy loads for long periods of time. They need to learn to discern when their complaint is justified and when it is not. If a person's work load falls within the normal range and he still cries about the pressure, this is another verbal expression of passive anger.

This depth of invisible anger is dressed in such nice forms. People say, "I am heartbroken. I have such a burden for So-and-So; let me tell you what he did." All that person is wanting to do is to pour out his passive anger on the other person.

Ministers counsel people with many forms of this class of anger. If a minister is not careful, he can become a human cesspool for other people's frozen anger. True, people do get real spiritual burdens for others, but there is a difference between a true concern and anger. A true spiritual burden will cause a person to pour out the burden in prayer to God — not into the ears of other human beings.

Sometimes people say, "I am so disappointed in that individual." Or, they may say, "Nobody loves me or appreciates me, although I work so hard. They simply demoralize me." What they really are saying is this: "That

person makes me angry.” But, as long as they dress it up, keeping its true angry nature invisible, they never will confess it, and they never will get that abused energy converted into useful and Righteous Energy.

People may express secondary passive anger in the invisible realm by saying that they feel hurt or sad. It is good to know where sadness comes from. When somebody displeases others or when things fail to suit them, they get mad — only they call it feeling *sad*. Many people, today, take drugs because they are feeling sad or angry and do not know how to handle their anger. When people get up in the morning and feel as though the bottom had dropped out of their world, they should think back to when something last displeased them.

The secondary passive verbal stage of a person’s invisible anger says, “I’m hurt. I’m brokenhearted. I’m demoralized. I’m disgusted. I’m disappointed. I’m under pressure. I’m harassed. I’m depressed. I’m humiliated. I’m a martyr. BUT, I AM NOT ANGRY!” How great that person’s darkness has become.

If confession and repentance is made immediately, the person’s whole world will change its sad appearance, and his depression will be gone. But, if he pushes anger down into the invisible realm, letting it work its way down into the passive stage, his anger will continue to grow.

## 2. Secondary Passive Actions

Sometimes people use their eyes of vision to try to look ahead into the future and imagine what will happen next week, next month, or next year. Often, people suspect the worst from God, from others, and from circumstances.

Although nothing has happened as yet, little god on the throne (in his imagined omnipotence, omniscience, and omnipresence) anticipates all sorts of things that make him angry at other people and even at God, when nothing actually has happened in the real world, only in his imagination. Sometimes the little god reconstructs past situations, according to his imagination, so that he can have an excuse to be angry. Sometimes, a person even wishes things will go wrong so that he can enjoy his anger and indignation.

Anger is abused energy, and anger is common to all people. We can look at someone who has a highly explosive temperament and say, “That poor man sure has a terrible temper. Poor soul. I pity him.” Actually, he is better off than people are who have pushed their anger down into the invisible realm. At least, the person with a nasty temper knows he has a terrible temper, and there is hope that he honestly will confess it and repent. People who are able to suppress their anger into the invisible frozen realm finally succeed in escaping from the conscious knowledge of it because it has taken on such passive forms that they no longer recognize it. As long as a person’s anger is hidden and denied, he will not repent of it.

Many of our martyr-like feelings come from this passive invisible realm of anger. As a practical example, let us consider what happens when little Johnny brings home a bad report card. In this case the eye of affliction is working. The upset mother says, “Johnny, that just makes me sad (mad) because I know you are capable of doing better.” Little god syndrome is working in mother. She plays the martyr, acting out her feelings of disappointment and hurt because Johnny is not living up to the family’s revelation of their little baby-god. He is not upholding the family’s reputation. Mother is not disappointed and hurt because she is so concerned for the child’s welfare; rather, her concern actually is her passive form of anger at work. She is humiliated. Her little god has been desecrated, and she is angry.

The child in our little parable feels guilt, which brings shame, and shame soon produces anger.

This is the same pattern that Adam-male and Adam-female experienced in the Garden. When the first pangs of guilt and shame from disobeying God came to our first parents, their anger was directed against themselves, so they ran and hid. However, in just a little while, they started putting their guilt and blame on others.

So it is with this child. He suffers his mother’s upset, and he feels bad. After awhile, however, when he reconsiders the matter and the guilt and shame increase, his anger turns from himself and is directed toward his mother. His little god starts talking, saying, “Now, who started this whole shameful thing anyhow? I would not be feeling bad if Mom had not kicked up such a fuss over my report card. This whole mess is her fault.” Now, he puts his fig leaves of anger up to protect himself, and the progression of anger begins to work within him as well as in his mother.

Transferral of guilt also can occur when ministers counsel people with problems. There are very few people with whom a minister can be perfectly honest. They know that if individuals’ problems were honestly exposed and discussed, they would react first with feelings of guilt and shame, which would cause them to feel angry with themselves. Soon, however, their little god would start devising a way to rid themselves of the guilt. They either turn

their anger against the counselor, blaming him for their terrible feelings, or they justify themselves by dismissing the entire matter and shoving it down into the moderate or secondary, passive invisible realms until it finally rests in their frozen cesspool.

This is a normal behaviour pattern for fallen man. It belongs to this passive secondary realm of invisible anger which has changing power. All men are quite adept at transferring guilt. Before he knows it, a man can rationally justify himself so that he is the martyr, the abused one; therefore, he concludes, "I am the saint; you are the sinner." He reasons as the child with the bad report card reasons: "Mother is mistreating me. What a mess she made of it all. I did the best I could on that report card, but nobody appreciates me. Besides, I have a mean old teacher who does not understand me." On and on goes the game of mental gymnastics. This is passive verbal anger working out of the secondary stage of invisible anger.

Some people keep dressing up anger in this secondary stage until they finally say, "Life is not worth living. I wish I were dead. I cannot see one ray of hope for the future." Hopeless feelings come out of the great block of frozen ice of anger that is being carried down in the frozen cesspool of forgotten anger. Little wonder that there is such a downward pull of man's feelings!

When these depressive feelings manifest themselves, they are coming out of hidden and suppressed anger, somewhere down in the invisible, subconscious realm. This is the time for the child of God to humble himself and confess his feelings of hopelessness and seek God so that He might unveil and expose the true source of the problem. A person who continues to let invisible frozen anger, with its excessive depressiveness, build up in his heart and will very often reach the point of suicide.

There are other people who have worn a saintly facade for so long that they actually carry a very Holy image of themselves. These people have succeeded in submerging all their angers deep within the invisible root system of their lives. They frequently become compulsive talkers, tossing Christian terminology around freely. "Praise the LORD. Hallelujah! It is just great being a Christian! I can't understand how anyone can be depressed; I *always* have the victory!" All the while, they are seething inside with hidden, invisible frozen anger.

People find it increasingly difficult to recognize the emotion of anger once it descends into the secondary passive stage. Yet, the profusion of religious jargon that comes out of the mouths of these people is a definite expression of their deceitful state. Sometimes it is almost impossible to get a word in edgewise with compulsive talkers. Many of them have let their anger over the ways things have gone in their life reach the wrathful stage.

Another passive action in the secondary phase of invisible anger is to withhold knowledge. Although people may be angry, they are too saintly to acknowledge the anger to themselves or to God. They need to confess their anger to themselves first; then, they can confess it to God. God's Word tells us that "If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness" (I John 1:9).

Withholding knowledge works in many ways. If a person shows someone something he has painted or created in some way, for example, instead of extending his approval, the person to whom the work is shown withholds what good he could say and lashes out in criticism and faultfinding, although he could find some complimentary comment to make were he not motivated in his remarks by his frozen anger. The poor, deflated, injured person walks away rejected, but he seldom realizes that it was the other person's passive angry actions working against him.

People's attitudes betray them. There always is a sting and a burn when they are acting out of hidden, invisible frozen anger. All people have these angers, both in their visible Tree of Anger and in its invisible root system, but they use different ways to cover up their anger. All people use the same routes, but at different times. They send out barbs and snips and give little digs here and there because they have disguised anger as something else.

As people digress from the point of reality and confession, they move downward into ever-increasing deceitfulness. Although it actually becomes darker and darker, it deceptively appears lighter and lighter and more righteous. Anger starts with a small bubble of agitated displeasure. Then, even though a person knows it is not right, he starts to clothe it over, hide it, and dress up his anger, while each downward step becomes increasingly deceptive.

### **3. Secondary Passive Reactions**

Secondary passive anger in the invisible realm expresses itself, first, through passive verbal anger, second, in passive actions, and, finally, in passive reactions. These reactions manifest themselves in compulsive work, insatiable desire, pride of name, excessive physical exercise or excessive sex drive, and strong inclinations to fight. In this realm, a martyr-parent works in every way possible to project his or her plans for the children's lives. Some

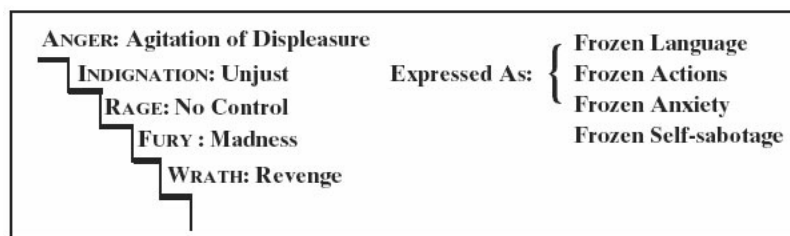
angry parents fight to maintain an excessive and unnatural parental possession. Others spend all their lives living just for their children. These are some of the ways in which anger expresses itself in its deceitful and subtle forms of secondary passive reactions.

As long as people are reacting in one way or another, their anger is not yet totally frozen. When it is completely frozen, they have no awareness of it. Although they are expressing themselves by reacting to what is in the invisible root system of the Tree of Anger, having passed through the first stage of moderation into the secondary stage of passivity, they still are able to discern, in some limited fashion, that something is amiss. This is not true once anger reaches the completely frozen stage. A person may dress up his original anger and change it into anything but anger until he lets God expose its true nature and repents and confesses his real problem.

Now we are ready to look into the frozen cesspool, the burial ground of all invisible anger in the midnight darkness of his sinful human will.

### C. Frozen-Cesspool Passive Anger

Frozen anger is the most dangerous kind of anger. At this point, self-sabotage is complete and anger enters a totally frozen stage of utter oblivion to one's conscious mind. People descend into the frozen cesspool of unconscious anger on the same steps which carry them up into visible anger and, then, down through the moderate and secondary stages of passive anger. This depth of anger expresses itself in frozen language, frozen actions, frozen anxieties, and frozen self-sabotage.



A person has reached the deepest part of the root system of the Tree of Anger at this point, which is completely invisible anger in its totally unconscious stage. The individual now is entirely deceived and unaware of his anger. It lies buried deep within the subconscious mind, dumped there because the person consciously refused to acknowledge it and deal with it. Nevertheless, anger still is present; and even in its frozen stage, its aggressive energy expresses itself. Frozen anger deadens feelings, kills spontaneity, kills all sensitivity to God's Spirit, and completely deadens all creativity.

We already have seen in the other major stages of anger that this energy expresses itself through a person's language, actions, and reactions, so it is no surprise to see anger expressing itself out of the frozen cesspool in the form of frozen language, frozen actions, frozen anxiety, and frozen self-sabotage.

#### 1. Frozen Language

Anger becomes gifted in more than one language-form when it reaches the depths of the frozen cesspool. It expresses itself in the following four languages: (a) pleasant verbal language; (b) entertainment verbal language; (c) frozen saint language; and (d) body organ language.

##### a. Frozen Verbal Language

The first frozen language-form is pleasant or super-sweet language. Super-sweetness is just another cloak of deceit to cover anger, but it is a much whiter cloak because of its nature of self-righteousness. Everyone has had the experience of having someone else speak with them in such a way that they felt as though they were being baptized in sticky, sweet syrup, and they have found themselves rejecting what the other person said and almost regurgitating. Actually, extremely sweet words do not taste sweet at all because people feel others' super-sweet anger.

People even use super-sweet language in voicing prayer burdens by saying something like this, for example: "Pray for Brother So-and-So; he is not what he ought to be." Soon, everybody comes along to look the person over,

trying to discern his problem. Their inner eyes begin to work, trying to see what this person has done that was so bad. If the individual has been guilty of something the people term as *bad*, the next thing they say is, "We should not fellowship with him; perhaps we should avoid him."

So people by-pass this individual, leaving him sitting isolated and desolate, wondering what is wrong with him. Then, along comes Miss Angry with her super-sweetness to redeem him from the low place. She thinks her drippy, sweet attention will make him feel better. Actually, it is her way of whipping him, making him accept something from her that will help get him out of the humble position.

It is possible for angry people to whip others with super-sweetness that is released through their benevolent acts. This is why the Apostle Paul said, "In my flesh dwelleth no good thing." If God is not directing us to help a person, we are doing nothing but putting on an angry, super-sweet demonstration. We still are trying to play little god. Super-sweet anger is trying to redeem the individual out of the low place instead of waiting and letting God do it in His time and in His own way.

Most of us, at one time or another, have done something nice and later wondered, "What on earth made me do that?" Actually, we would rather have knocked that person's teeth out. Why, then, did we put on that sweet front to his face? It was our little god syndrome at work. We wanted everyone to think we were a holy little god, so we used super-sweet language to hide our anger.

This behaviour produces a phony quality about people that most others see right through. There is no substitute for true sincerity. How much better it would be if everyone who has been angry at someone else would get down before the LORD in prayer and confess the Truth, saying, "God, that person made me mad. You know I wanted to hit him, but, Jesus, I don't want to be like this. Please help me. Change me. Change this terrible anger in me."

Deliverance from anger does not come until a person starts facing up squarely to the thing and calling it for what it really is. Only then can God help him. Only then can he come out with his life ringing with the golden bells of sincerity which nothing else can imitate.

Please do not get confused. *All sweetness is not anger in disguise.* God gives true righteousness to sincere hearts, and that righteousness makes individuals sweet, thoughtful, kind, and benevolent. But, *self* loves to imitate the reality that God works in His people when they walk with Him and do His Will.

This imitation, phony sweetness clearly is evident in the secular world. They have learned to mask their real feelings, assuming this pretentious, super-sweet front in their relationships with one another. It is bad enough to see phoniness in the various activities of the business and secular world, but it is much worse when people in churches operate on the same principle. When flesh exalts itself, it does so by pushing everyone else down into the low place. Then, flesh turns around and ministers out of super-sweet anger to those low ones so that it might continue building its little kingdom.

Let us take another example of super-sweet anger at work. This time we will use the family situation between a husband and wife. The wife comes home all excited about the message of the Crucified Way of Jesus Christ, but her husband does not see it at all. An argument evolves from this discussion, and both of them become angry and exchange nasty words. Finally, the fight subsides, and they make up. However, instead of repenting and confessing her anger for what it really is, the wife calls it by a nice name and lets it slip down into the cesspool where it becomes frozen in the invisible realm. With frozen anger to support her, she comes out coldly determined to press on in the Crucified Way of Jesus Christ, regardless of how her husband feels.

In her conscious mind, the wife really loves the message. She is faithful to church. She teaches a Sunday school class. She thinks that she is going on for God. Actually, she is taking out her angry revenge against her husband. But, God is faithful to test and prove all His children. Time passes and the husband dies, leaving the wife entirely free to do as she desires. Now that there no longer is a need to project her anger against her husband, she backslides on God and loses all interest in spiritual things.

Actually, this woman had not dealt with her anger against her husband but had disguised and hidden it under a religious, supersweet appearance. Her spiritual interest had been wrongly motivated; she was striking back at her husband from anger. She ended up blaming God for taking her husband and for her backsliding, but the Truth of the matter was that she never had been real for God, nor had she permitted God's Word and Spirit to work reality in her heart.

God has to try individuals in order to expose their supersweet anger which has them in darkness and total deceit. People are not able, within themselves, to discern their motives rightly. God must do it, and He is faithful to do it.

Super-sweet anger works in many ways. Let us use another hypothetical case of a Christian couple in which both

parties apparently are trying to go on for God. Somewhere along the way, however, the husband gradually begins to lose out. The woman picks up a spirit against God, and because she knows that it is wrong, she hides it under a super-sweet attitude. She comes up with a revelation. "God has told me that I must go with my husband. I must be kind and loving to him and partake of all the pleasure-death that he wants to partake of. I am saving my home. I really am doing the Will of God." Then the marriage disintegrates. What happened? God moved in the midst of the problem to test and prove their real motives, and He exposed the true nature of the whole thing.

What is God really after in every situation? It is His Will to restore Paradise within the human heart and will, and Paradise comes only through a person's complete Union with God's Will in his life. God wants everyone to come to the place that they want nothing apart from His Will — He becomes their life. In order to bring these things to pass in reality in individuals' lives, God must test and try them. He is faithful to do that. He sometimes even permits their marriage partners to walk in an opposite direction in order to see if they are willing to walk alone and be satisfied with just Him.

God does not necessarily endorse the many routes people take, for it is His Will that they catch a vision of their true inner condition and deal with it. Neither is it necessary for them to carry into practice all the sinful seeds which lie within their hearts and wills. God's Perfect Will is for a person to repent of these seeds of sinful desire and practice while they still are in the seed-stage and not allow them to grow up into full maturity of demonstration and action. If, through the process of confession and repentance, a person deals immediately with anger, as soon as its little bubbles arise, God will cleanse that person from his sin and change his corrupt angry energy into Righteous Energy.

God is faithful to expose us; He will shake all that is shake-able in our life. He will shake the fleshly nature in us until we recognize and realize the reality of it.

Deceitful, super-sweet anger usually is what is working in a person's subconscious and unconscious realms when he gets offended in church, walks out in a huff, and starts saying, "There are too many hypocrites in that church. I am too good a Christian to fellowship those people. I am going to look for a clean church." All his accusations against other church members are just excuses to avoid dealing with his own anger.

We must not be angry with people who say these things, for they are blind. Their eyes have not been opened to understand what is working in them. Everyone is guilty of saying similar things until God opens the eyes of their wills so that they can see and understand the deceitful workings of their own hearts.

Pleasant, super-sweet anger also works in this way: Suppose someone has committed an offense against another person and he is angry. Later, the person who was offensive comes back to confess his wrong and ask forgiveness, and the other person responds by saying, "Forget it. I wasn't aware that you had done anything." In other words, "I am so saintly and so much holier than you that I didn't even feel bothered by your offense." Nonsense! Everyone picks up bad vibrations when people offend them in one way or another. No one is so saintly and no one lives so far above these things that he fails to notice them.

The angry vibrations people feel sometimes come from within their own hearts; other times they come from without. The Devil enjoys tormenting a person by making him think that what he is feeling is coming from his own heart and will rather than from another person's frozen anger. But, discernment is easy if a person is honest. Telling whether the waves of agitation are coming from without or from within is possible. If people have their eyes opened to see, they know immediately when they have said or done something to offend someone else; they feel the other person's offended vibrations. They also can tell if the bad vibrations are springing up from down inside their own beings because they can feel those little bubbles of agitation and displeasure coming up.

If the vibrations are coming from without, a person can know he has offended someone, whether it was intentional or not. Then is the time to pray, saying, "LORD, I am sorry. I did not mean to offend. Please forgive me. Help that person to feel my love and concern for him." Soon, the atmosphere will clear again. The repentant one's good vibrations will overpower and sanctify the offended person's angry vibrations. If one fails to do his part, however, the offended person may shove his anger down into the invisible realm, for he may be too embarrassed to acknowledge, even to himself, that he is angry about the offense. We need not hinder others, for God would not have us offend anyone. If we will open our inner eyes and keep a sensitivity about us, God will help us in every situation.

Super-sweet anger also says, "Oh, don't worry about me. I am fine. Everything is great. Everything is just lovely." Hidden anger, cloaked in its deceitful garment of pleasant language, is speaking in this instance. When the Apostle Peter exhorted us not to use our liberty for a cloak of maliciousness, he was referring to our *super-sweet*

liberty.

This class of super-sweetness is the thing in a person that looks for Truth which he can use as a weapon against others. Some ministers use their pulpits to strike out against those who have displeased them in some way. They use the Truth as a super-sweet weapon. By failing to *speak the Truth in love*, they cut and wound and injure with it.

Another form of super-sweet language is excessively boring talk. It can become a tortuous experience to be trapped into prolonged conversations with an angry person. Such a person will laugh in the wrong places, talk while someone else talks, and be late for appointments. These actions are still other supersweet mechanisms, the out-workings of invisible, frozen anger being expressed through pleasant language.

### **b. Frozen-Entertainment Verbal Language**

Frozen-entertainment verbal language resorts to sarcasm and biting humour. Compulsive joking or laughing can be frozen anger coming out. A person who has been rejected as a child sometimes tries to find his way into acceptance with other human beings by becoming a compulsive entertainer, comedian, or incessant joker.

Wit can be a natural gift which enables people to put things together in a funny manner. Everyone enjoys this kind of fellowship. However, when joking becomes extreme, it can indicate an emotional problem of frozen anger.

Frozen-entertainment anger can take the form of gossip, too. Many times when the gruesome details of someone's latest escapade are being related, the gossip's frozen-entertainment anger is coming forth. The gossip is angry, at a very deep level, because he or she is unable to do what the guilty person is doing.

If we are not enjoying other people's sins, then why are we so bent on feeding on them? If other people have done such repulsive things, why are we defiling others with the mention of their sins? The Bible tells us that it is a shame to speak of those things that are done of them in secret. We should be leery of gossipy people and refuse to let them use our ears for garbage pails.

If people let gossip be poured into them by someone who is venting his frozen-entertainment anger, they come away feeling miserable. Then, later, when they go to the House of God, they are in no condition to yield to the Spirit or to meditate on the Word of God.

If a person has been polluted by listening to others' gossip, he must repent and seek the cleansing Power of Jesus' Hot, Fiery Resurrection Blood that will melt away the defilement and the frozen anger of his own heart. Righteousness is gained by confessing one's anger, repenting of it, and letting it be converted into Holy, Righteous Energy which aggressively shares the Word of God. Then, a person will not enjoy talking about the faults of his brothers and sisters. Instead, he will be interested in fellowshipping around the blessings of God's Word and His Love, both of which will leave him feeling clean and good.

As long as a person continues playing games, lying to himself and to others through these various forms of frozen-entertainment anger, it is practically impossible for that person to convey the Truth just as it is. If people will lie to someone else, they will end up lying to themselves.

### **c. Frozen-Saint Language**

Frozen-saint language goes beyond vocalization. It involves role playing. "Saintly" people express their anger, but they choose to act in the opposite manner so that no one will know their true feelings. Nobody can discern from their words that they are angry, for their words give the impression of great saintliness.

When a real anger-provoking situation arises, the "frozen" saint takes the following attitude: "I never get angry. It is not worth it. I can't be bothered with such carnal things. I could not care less." "Saintly" people determine to put the matter out of mind, so they take a shower and forget anything has happened, or they take a pill and go to sleep. Or, they may blame the other fellow by saying, "He must be sick; therefore, I must forgive him." No actor in Hollywood can compete with the "frozen" saint when it comes to role playing. Everyone knows how to play the part perfectly.

### **d. Frozen Body-Organ Language**

Frozen body-organ language is anger that is unleashed inwardly; it affects people's physical organs, producing what is called psychosomatic diseases.

Inherited anger from Adam the First is aggressive and corrupt energy. When angry energy vibrates against the organs of the body, the organs cry out against it. People who have terrible neck-aches or headaches should stop to consider if they recently have spoken in anger against someone or something, saying, "That gives me a pain in the neck." Certainly, headaches can come from physical reasons; nevertheless, many are caused psychosomatically. Recurrent headaches frequently are the voice of frozen anger speaking out through the organs of the body. Colitis, ulcers, arthritis, bronchitis, allergies, paralysis, and many other physical afflictions are related directly to the realms of frozen anger which lie hidden deeply within the human being. Constant fatigue also can be another avenue of escape from frozen anger.

After frozen anger has expressed itself through pleasant, super-sweet language, frozen-entertainment language, frozen-saint language, and frozen body-organ language, it sends its cold, icy vibrations out through frozen actions.

## **2. Frozen Actions**

Frozen anger expresses itself through frozen actions. The actions of hypochondriacs, sadists, rapists, murderers, and dope addicts often are the results of the frozen anger buried deeply within the cesspool of the human heart and will. Such actions also can be expressed in forms that are more acceptable to society. For instance, some "nice guy" may court every available girl and break their hearts. This is a form of acting nice in order to be cruel, for this cruelty eases the invisible anger that is frozen within this type of person's heart and will. Sometimes frozen actions are expressed by indulging in excessive sleep. Sleep, then, becomes an escape from frozen anger.

As we delve into the frozen realms of the cesspool of anger hidden in its invisible stage, deep within every man, we pass from frozen actions into frozen anxiety.

## **3. Frozen Anxiety**

Let no man think that he is free simply because he no longer is conscious of anger. The binding power of anger's strong vibrations increase with each step a person takes, as he descends into his frozen cesspool. By the time his anger reaches the frozen anxiety and fear level, he no longer has anger — it has him!

Anxiety anger expresses itself in the form of worry, sleeplessness, and a multitude of obsessions and phobias. When people cannot enjoy today for worrying about tomorrow, they can be sure they are being assailed by waves of anxiety coming from their frozen anger.

Sleeplessness is man's little god syndrome trying to imitate the Eternal God Who never slumbers or sleeps; it is his little god trying to watch over his universe so that he can be sure that no pain gets in. Even when people's conscious minds say, "I'm exhausted. I have to get some rest so that I can work tomorrow," their anxious little gods, down in their frozen cesspools, keep right on pushing their "wide-awake" buttons.

Webster's Dictionary says that an obsession is a persistent, disturbing preoccupation with an often unreasonable idea or feeling.

Some people are obsessed with the idea that everyone else is talking about them. Others are obsessed with the idea that nobody likes them. Still others are obsessed with the idea that they are God's gift to women or to men, as the case may be. These poor souls waste their precious life's energies trying to get every woman or every man to bow in reverence at their feet. The fact that their obsession is unreasonable makes no impression on them, for they constantly are bombarded by cold, angry waves of anxiety that push and drive them toward making more and new conquests.

A phobia is an exaggerated, usually inexplicable and illogical, fear of a particular object or class of objects. People have phobias or fears of large open spaces, small confined spaces, high places, sharp instruments, germs, dirt, thunderstorms, water, cats, dogs, even other people, as well as countless other things. This short list of common phobias is in itself enough to strike a sobering tone when one realizes that these fears are very real to the people who have them. Their lives are twisted out of balance as they try to survive in a world they fear.

Not everyone has phobias that fit into the categories mentioned, but all people have exaggerated fears which make their lives miserable to some measure. Many people live with a fear, for example, that others will not like them because they have big feet, big hands, a long nose, or because they are too short or too tall.

All obsessions and fears have binding power. In order for a person to be free, he must let God show him the old angers that have been pushed down into the anxiety level of the subconscious and unconscious realms of his heart

and will.

When we repent of our anger and sins and confess them to Jesus Christ, asking His forgiveness, His Blood carries the frozen energy of our confessed sins back behind God's Back where the converting process changes those sins into Righteous Energy which, when it is returned to us, can be used to serve God more perfectly.

Those who let anger reach the depths of the frozen cesspool find it expressing itself in its final and most destructive form — self-sabotage.

#### 4. Frozen Self-sabotage

When the transformation of anger is complete, it becomes self-sabotage. All of anger's aggressive energy is then channeled inwardly, where it manifests itself as self-destruction. Suicide, of course, is the ultimate expression of self-sabotage. Yet, the businessman who burns the candle at both ends, striving for impossible goals, is also expressing this degree of anger. The alcoholic and the drug addict both deliberately indulge in these substances, against all sense and reason, because they are driven by a frozen force that constantly pushes them closer and closer to the brink of destruction. A person's persistent use of tobacco, in spite of evidence that it causes cancer, is self-sabotage anger at work. A person who deliberately gets chilled or wet or otherwise makes himself sick is expressing some of the self-hate or self-sabotage that is frozen down in the very core of his being.

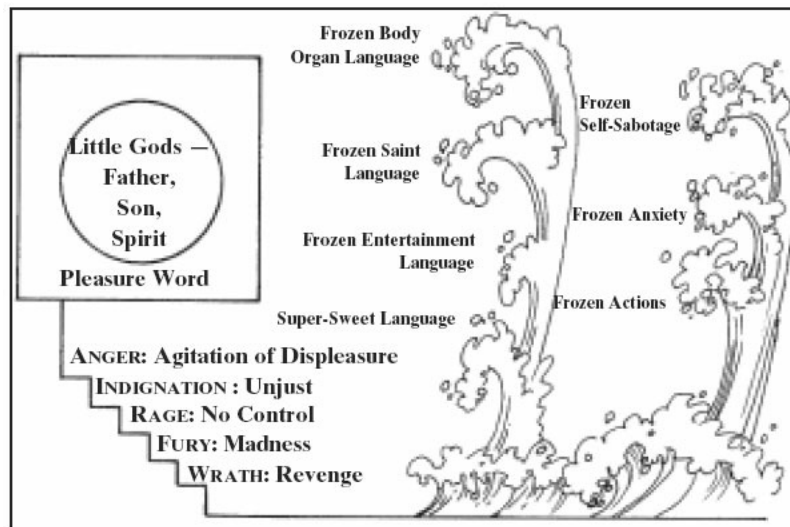
Regardless of whether a fast or a slow route is taken, the end of self-sabotage always is the same — it always brings the individual to *death*.

There are three main underground roots to the Tree of Anger. The first invisible root is called moderate passive anger. At this level, anger is modified, and its diluted form is expressed in one's language, actions, and reactions.

The second root of underground anger is called secondary passive anger which brings a person closer to complete denial. Self-deception reigns here. This degree of anger comes out in one's language, actions, and reactions.

The third and deepest root of anger goes down into the frozen cesspool where anger is separated completely from the conscious mind. Angry vibrations from the cesspool, however, continue to make themselves known in the form of frozen language, frozen actions, frozen anxiety, and frozen self-sabotage.

A diagram of the level of anger called the "frozen cesspool" may help to emphasize this important stage of anger.



# Chapter Ten

## The Deepest Form Of Anger — Wrath

Previous chapters have given a panoramic view of the Tree of Anger with its growth and manifestations of visible, aboveground anger. The Tree's further development includes the moderate passive and secondary passive stages of the Tree's invisible root system. Then, the Tree's taproot takes anger down into the frozen cesspool of the human heart and will. In this state, people no longer carry an awareness of anger's presence in their conscious minds.

In order to ascend and to descend into anger, man uses the same set of steps as he moves from visible to invisible anger and from one depth of anger to another. These steps, in order of their intensity and depth, are called anger, indignation, rage, fury, and wrath.

Since wrath is the deepest step, it represents the maturity of anger in both the visible and invisible realms. Careful study of God's Word reveals a close connection between wrath and spiritual pride. Both of these corrupted seeds grow in the human heart. As man's wrath grows, his spiritual pride also matures. By the time anger reaches the wrath stage, it is ready to join forces with spiritual pride. Wrath and spiritual pride hope, through their combined efforts, to accomplish their desired goal — the establishment and exaltation of the human will over God and His Purposive Will.

This Truth is evident in the lives of Cain, Saul, Naaman, and Uzziah. All these people joined their wrath to spiritual pride.

Proud wrath was evidenced in the life of Cain, the firstborn son of Adam and Eve.

### I. Cain

Adam-male and female had to be cast out of the Garden of Eden because they had disobeyed God, but God did not send them out naked. He slew some little animals, shed their blood as a covering for sin, then clothed fallen man with the animals' skins.

Adam and Eve left the Garden of Eden with the necessary Wisdom, Understanding, and Knowledge of how to approach God in the future. They knew that the way to God was through a blood sacrifice. The fact that Abel, Cain's younger brother, knew exactly what kind of offering to present to God is a witness that Adam and Eve had to have passed this information and training on to their children.

And Adam knew Eve his wife; and **she conceived, and bare Cain**, and said, I have gotten a man from the LORD. And **she again bare his brother Abel**. And Abel was a keeper of sheep, but Cain was a tiller of the ground. And in process of time it came to pass, that Cain brought of the fruit of the ground an offering unto the LORD. **And Abel, he also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of the fat thereof. And the LORD had respect unto Abel and to his offering:** But unto Cain and to his offering he had not respect. And Cain was very wroth, and his countenance fell (Genesis 4:1-5).

When Abel offered his sacrificial lamb upon the altar and called upon the LORD, the Fire of God fell to consume the sacrifice. Through his blood sacrifice, Abel had communion with God, was cleansed in his soul, and was blessed with God's Glory, His Presence, and His Power. Abel's experience was completely different from his brother Cain's.

Cain knew that God required a blood sacrifice, but he chose to by-pass the blood offering. In the place of blood, he brought a bread offering. Cain had a proud thought to come a higher way than God had ordained.

Later, when the Tabernacle was built in the wilderness, God revealed the exalted position of the bread offering, as well as the position one needed to attain in God in order to make this offering. God never changes His Principles. The first offering in the Tabernacle was blood. The blood sacrifices were made out in the Courtyard, for it was the

blood that provided Israel with a way of approach to God. The bread offering belonged to the Table of Shewbread up higher in the Tabernacle — in the Holy Place. The Priest did not offer this sacrifice until after he had been through the blood out in the Courtyard.

In addition to the teachings of his father and mother, Cain had a visible witness of the right offering to make. Abel's offering with Holy Fire blazing on it, converting the sacrifice into a sweet-smelling savour in the nostrils of God, was in plain view. However, Cain thought he had something better to offer to God. He built his altar, placed his bread there, and waited. But, nothing happened. No Fire came from God to accept and consume Cain's offering because it was made out of spiritual pride.

The Bible says that Cain was *very wrath*. His countenance fell. Anger set in, and indignation quickly followed. Down the steps of rage and fury he went until he found himself in the very depths of anger — *wrath!* Cain's spiritual pride and his wrath worked together at this level of anger.

Spiritual pride deceives a person into thinking that he can please God by coming some other way than through the precious shed Blood of Jesus Christ, typed by the Old Testament animal sacrifices. But, when God does not accept pride's offering, man's spiritual pride becomes filled with wrath.

**And the LORD said unto Cain, Why art thou wrath?** and why is thy countenance fallen? If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him (Genesis 4:6,7).

Instead of immediately humbling himself and realizing that something was wrong with his sacrifice, Cain let his spiritual pride become filled with wrath. Spiritual pride always gets angry with everyone else. It is easy to say, "It is someone else's fault that there is no Fire on my sacrifice. It is God's fault. It is Abel's fault."

God could have rebuked Cain. He could have said, "You are the firstborn. Surely, you know better. Your younger brother is doing right while you are doing wrong." Instead, God handled the matter kindly by asking Cain why he was so filled with wrath and why his countenance was so downcast. If Cain had answered God's questions honestly, it could have been the beginning of the solution to his spiritual pride, for God was giving Cain an opportunity to think about why he was so angry; thus, he could have discovered the source of his anger.

Cain had no legitimate reason to be angry with Abel. Abel merely was carrying out the Divine Principles he had been taught from the beginning. Had Cain calmed down long enough to think clearly, he could have traced the source of his anger back to himself.

If we will be honest with ourself in similar situations, we will be able to think back to the very situation that displeased us in the beginning and which finally brought us to proud wrath.

Cain may have thought his position as firstborn entitled him to special privileges, but he was mistaken. He had done the wrong thing, and wrong never entitles anyone to special privileges with God; instead, wrongdoing puts everyone in the position to receive chastisement and correction.

Cain ignored his opportunity to repent. Instead of applying the cure, he took out his wrathful anger upon his brother Abel. When they were out in the field talking, Cain rose up against Abel his brother, and slew him. Jewish history says that Cain kept on beating his brother even after he had killed him. He thought that by killing Abel he would force God to accept his proud offering, but God never is bound by man's finiteness. Instead, God performed a miracle and resurrected the supernatural Seed of Promise committed to Abel and gave Adam and Eve another son, named Seth, to carry that Seed. Thus, in spite of Cain's proud wrath, God's Will, God's Plan, and God's Purpose were carried out.

## II. King Saul

Like others who are afflicted with spiritual pride, Saul never was satisfied with the portion God divided to him. His life was another example of wrathful spiritual pride.

**And Saul was very wrath,** and the saying displeased him; and he said, They have ascribed unto David ten thousands, and to me they have ascribed but thousands: and what can he have more but the kingdom? (I Samuel 18:8).

Saul wanted what had been given to David. He did not even deserve the praise of the thousands because he had been disobedient to God, but spiritual pride blinds a person. Had Saul been honest in the situation, he would have asked himself, "Why am I in this condition? Why am I displeased? Why am I jealous?" He finally would have come to the conclusion that he was dissatisfied with the portion that God had appointed to him.

When wrath is joined to spiritual pride, we think our spiritual stature is bigger than it is, and we become ambitious for more glory and honour than God has seen fit to give us. Oh, that man could perceive the weightiness of God's Glory and Honour and understand that these adornments are much too heavy to be borne by immature or underdeveloped shoulders!

It is God's Mercy that weighs out the glory in proportion to the true measure of our spiritual stature, rather than according to the exalted image projected by spiritual pride. When our stature in God is worthy of more glory, we can rest assured that the LORD will clothe us with all the glory and honour we can bear and still retain our spiritual equilibrium.

### III. Naaman

In spite of the fact that he was a very important man in the country of Syria, Naaman was a leper without hope of a cure. But, a little Jewish maid lifted up her testimony, telling him that there was a man of God over in Israel who had power to take away his leprosy. So, Naaman's little father-god quickly ascended to the throne and planned the whole affair. In his pride and self-importance, he thought he knew exactly how his cleansing should take place, and his wrath came up when he was instructed differently by the Prophet.

So Naaman came with his horses and with his chariot, and stood at the door of the house of Elisha. And Elisha sent a messenger unto him, saying, Go and wash in Jordan seven times, and thy flesh shall come again to thee, and thou shalt be clean. **But Naaman was wroth**, and went away, and said, Behold, I thought, He will surely come out to me, and stand, and call on the name of the LORD his God, and strike his hand over the place, and recover the leper. Are not Abana and Pharpar, rivers of Damascus, better than all the waters of Israel? may I not wash in them, and be clean? So he turned and went away in a rage (II Kings 5:9-12).

Naaman had quite an exalted picture formulated in his mind. He saw himself standing erect and tall in all his regal splendour and finery, and he saw the man of God coming out to conduct a ceremony befitting the situation. Instead, he was told by Elisha's servant to go wash in the muddy river of Jordan. The Prophet did not so much as do him the courtesy of coming out to greet him.

Immediately, Naaman's little god-the-son started working to redeem him from humiliation. Did Syria not have far more impressive rivers in which to bathe? Surely, he would not have to humble himself to the extent of bathing in the muddy River Jordan! So, he turned away in wrath. Spiritual pride stood as a tremendous barrier to his deliverance.

Fortunately, Naaman had some servants who dared to speak up and admonish him to reconsider. If the Prophet had required a great or difficult thing of him, he certainly would have done it. But, because dipping in a muddy river was public humiliation, he wrath-fully cast aside the Prophet's words. The wise counsel of his servants helped Naaman realize that spiritual pride was his problem. They helped him to see that he wanted to have everything on the pleasure side of the scales while rejecting the pain side of humility.

The following is a little story to illustrate the danger of joining oneself to a love for all-pleasure.

Once upon a time, a little dragonfly, named Likey, lived in a man's grocery store. Likey flew about all day in search of a crumb or two to eat, but his efforts were relatively unsuccessful. Likey was still hungry. As the end of the day neared, poor little Likey the dragonfly was discouraged, weak, and weary. It had been a painful day of fruitless searching.

Finally, it was dark and time for the grocer to close the store. In his haste, he accidentally knocked a jar of honey off the shelf onto the floor. He was just too tired to stay and clean up the sticky mess, so he locked the store, leaving the honey on the floor to be cleaned up the next day.

Spotting the interesting glob on the floor, Likey the little dragonfly flew down to investigate it. One nibble caused him to flap his wings with excitement. "This is fantastic! It sure feels good in my stomach." Each lap of honey brought increased strength to Likey. Then Likey thought to himself, "I know what I'll do. I'll have a party. What a pleasant night we have ahead of us." And with that, Likey the dragonfly flew out through a hole in the window to invite all his friends to his party. He invited the housefly, the horsefly, the mosquito, the gnat, and the mayfly. He rounded up as many as he knew, saying, "Come with me. You are going to have the best time you ever had in all your life. We are going to have a party. I already have the table spread. We are going to have the most pleasant time tonight."

So they all went buzzing along with Likey. (I named our fly *Likey* because he *liked* only the pleasure and did not *like* the pain.) So they followed Likey through the little hole in the window and into the store. Likey pointed out the delicious honey spilled on the floor, and they all gathered in a circle around the edges of the honey. As they ate, they all agreed, "This is fantastic! We never have tasted anything better. Come on, let's have a ball. Let's really have a good time tonight." So they waded in deeper and deeper.

But, after awhile, when Likely tried to pull up one of his legs, he found that it would not come out of the sticky honey. He tried again... and again... and again. He noticed that the horsefly was in the same fix. Poor mosquito was trying to pull out his long, skinny legs, but he, too, was stuck. Then, they all realized that they truly were stuck! They were too deep in their pleasure. The more they struggled, the tighter they stuck. The sticky, sweet honey ceased to be pleasure. Little for little, they all drowned in their pleasure, crying out in anger against Likey the dragonfly, saying that it was all his fault because he had invited them to the party.

The moral of this story is obvious: excessive pleasure will kill us.

This is what spiritual pride will do to us. If God lets us have our own way, which always is bent on pleasure, we would follow the same route as Likey the dragonfly. If we had our own way, we would keep wading in, never being satisfied, never having enough pleasure. And, like Naaman, we would do all we could to avoid the painful experience of dipping in the Jordan-Waters of the LORD's Headship.

If Naaman had clung to his robes of beauty and dignity, he would have died with his foul disease, but he awakened to his problem in time. He stripped off his glory-garments as a demonstration of his rejection of spiritual pride; then, he waded into the river of humility and pain where he dipped seven times as the Prophet had ordered. Naaman could not by-pass the Humility-Pain Principle and live.

Spiritual pride finally will destroy us if we let it have its way. Pride makes us angry and fills us with wrath when everything does not go to suit us, and we have to humble ourself. We must realize, as Naaman finally did, that humility is the way to life, and pain is the way of life. But, spiritual pride says, "I don't need the Pain Principle; I don't need humility. All I need is the Pleasure Principle." Pride sounds like Likey the dragonfly.

God is faithful to serve every person his portion of pain. However, when fleshly anger turns into wrath and joins itself to spiritual pride, it gives birth to proud rejection of pain and humility. Our proud wrath will cause us to resist and reject the only way to life. That is why it is so important that we confess and repent for our anger and spiritual pride while they still are in the seed stage of development.

#### IV. Uzziah

Wrathful spiritual pride also will make a person try to rise above his leader. Uzziah, deceived by spiritual pride, resolved to serve as his own High Priest, so he took it upon himself to minister the Incense upon the Altar in the Holy Place. Azariah the High Priest and eighty other Priests withstood him in an effort to make him realize what he was doing, but King Uzziah had a lifted-up heart. He was inflated with spiritual pride and determined to have his own will and way, even though he knew he was transgressing against the LORD since God had shut up the priesthood to the tribe of Levi.

And they withstood Uzziah the king, and said unto him, **It appertaineth not unto thee, Uzziah, to burn incense unto the LORD, but to the priests the sons of Aaron, that are consecrated to burn incense:** go out of the sanctuary; for thou hast trespassed; neither shall it be for thine honour from the LORD God. **Then Uzziah was wroth, and had a censer in his hand to burn incense: and while he was wroth with the priests, the leprosy even rose up in his forehead** before the priests in the house of the LORD, from beside the incense altar. And Azariah the chief priest, and all the priests, looked upon him, and, behold, he was leprous in his forehead, and they thrust him out from thence; yea, himself hastened also to go out, because the LORD had smitten him. And Uzziah the king was a leper unto the day of his death,... (II Chronicles 26:18-21).

The LORD originally intended that He Himself would be Israel's King. We know this because of what the LORD said when Samuel prayed to Him, telling Him that Israel had demanded a king to rule over her.

And the LORD said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto thee: for they have not rejected thee, **but they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them** (I Samuel 8:7).

Although the LORD conceded to Israel's demands for a natural king to rule her, He retained His Supreme Headship over the nation and over the king. The kings had to come to God through the ministry of the Priesthood, just as did all the rest of Israel. When the king needed to know God's Mind and Will for the nation or for himself personally, he had to resort to the Priesthood.

Spiritual Pride made King Uzziah intrude into the Priesthood, trying to step above his God-given authority as king. Korah, Dathan, Abiram, and On were also guilty of this class of sin. Spiritual pride caused them to rise up against God's appointed leaders, Moses and Aaron. It is a serious thing to contend with the appointed and anointed servants whom God has set over us. As we well know, Uzziah died under the Judgment of God, and the other three men were swallowed up into the pit, destroyed by God's angry Judgment.

It is impossible for a person to go on for God unless he deals with his anger, for when anger reaches the stage of wrath, it enters into a joining with spiritual pride. The Book of Proverbs has much to say about the Strange Woman of Pride. Those who “marry” their souls to spiritual pride, following her in the ways of Death and Hell, cannot consider or find the path of Life.

May God grant us the Wisdom to see our anger and pride in the first stages; the Understanding to confess our sin and repent; the Knowledge to keep the Truth and Life ever before our face; and the Discretion to guard our surrenders.

# Chapter Eleven

## The Need For Growth

Growth and development in the physical realm, the emotional realm, and the spiritual realm are normal and exciting. It is tragic when something happens to slow or hinder normal progress toward maturity in any one of these areas.

For example, a two-year-old child in a high chair is a joy to the family, but there is little joy if that child still is sitting in the high chair at the age of ten, unable to handle himself as other children his age. It is equally tragic, but perhaps less evident, if a person fails to mature emotionally; he brings sorrow to his family. And, in like manner, our Heavenly Father's Heart is grieved when our spiritual growth and moral development are stunted for one reason or another.

There are certain signs which indicate a person's spiritual maturity or immaturity. Discouragement and disappointment, for example, are signs of anger. The presence of these attitudes are indicative of spiritual immaturity and affirm the fact that a person does not yet have his *patient eye* opened in his will to the Goodness of God's Headship.

Before we can realize our need for further growth, we must see our immaturity. The Apostle Peter made the following exhortation to Christians: "But grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ..." (II Peter 3:18). Many of our emotional problems are the result of our failure to grow in the Grace and Knowledge of our LORD and Saviour. If we grow in gratitude toward our LORD, and if we see our unChrist-like nature, we will ask our Saviour to cleanse us from those things that are not like Him.

Emotional and spiritual growth are evident in a person's responses to life's situations, and there are signs which point to the lack of emotional and spiritual growth.

### I. Evidences of Emotional and Spiritual Growth

Just as there are some recognizable milestones of progressive, normal physical development, so also are there some definite evidences of emotional and spiritual maturity. The absence of the positive characteristics or the presence of certain negative behavioural patterns are the marks of emotional and spiritual immaturity. By studying the points discussed in this chapter, a person can determine the areas in which he has gained a measure of emotional and spiritual maturity, while recognizing the areas in which further development is needed.

#### A. The Ability to Accept Pleasure and Pain

The first step of growing up or maturing spiritually involves the acceptance of God's Pleasure and Pain Principle. In order to do this successfully, one must know how to separate and discern between the two.

From Adam the First, man inherited the corrupted Pleasure-Pain Principle; thus all people come into this world with their hands crossed, calling true pleasure *pain* and calling true pain *pleasure*. We all see directly opposite to how God sees pleasure and pain. This confused state causes us to suffer many problems and frustrations in life. Only a mature person — one who has grown in grace and in the knowledge of our LORD Jesus Christ — can rightly divide the two.

An infant comes into the world with an active little god syndrome that causes him to think that everything revolves around him for his satisfaction and pleasure. Gradually, as he grows, he is introduced to the painful aspect of life. A child must adjust to the fact that there is pain in his world.

Only a mature person recognizes and accepts pleasure and pain as a part of the reality of life and looks for new

Grace and Knowledge from the LORD Jesus Christ in the midst of all pleasure and pain. There is no escaping the Principle of Pleasure and Pain. God has ordered it so.

We enter life in a state of complete dependence; but as growth increases, we have to learn independence which frequently proves to be a painful process. Growing up means that we have to learn to accept the limitation of our immediate satisfaction. A little child can be very impatient and demanding, and so can some adults who have refused to accept the Reality Principle. Impatience says, "I want my pleasure right now." A mature person can learn to endure his pain patiently and wait for the fulfillment of his pleasure-need at a later time. Sooner or later, we all have to be weaned from our dependencies; we have to grow up.

Juvenile behaviour is not difficult to recognize. We want to pray when we feel like it. We want to go to church when we are in the mood. We want to eat when we get hungry. We want to sleep when we feel sleepy. We want our will and way — when we want it.

This is how every person behaves until he learns to limit his desire for immediate satisfaction. A person who can limit his desire for satisfaction does not become angry so readily. He starts reacting to the frustrations and interruptions of life in more mature ways.

## **B. The Ability to Be Satisfied with the Loss of Old Pleasure and to Seek New Pleasure**

The second step to growing up involves the ability to be satisfied with the loss of old pleasure and the ability to humble oneself to seek new pleasure. Small children feel comforted and satisfied while they are being carried about in their mother's arms or being tended in her lap. If children are developing as they should, they soon will be ready to sit in a high chair and even to start taking a few steps by themselves. However, children must be willing to give up the old pleasure of their mothers' arms and their mothers' laps before they fully can enjoy a new pleasure.

Growth is change. Once a person stops changing, he stops growing and soon reaches a stage of stagnation which, in turn, becomes a stairway of regression. Growth is painful in the beginning, but children who are willing to relinquish their more juvenile forms of pleasure can enter into the more mature pleasure of independence. This is true in both the natural and spiritual realms.

The Israelites behaved like little children when they were on their wilderness journey from Egypt to Canaan's Land. God miraculously had delivered them from merciless Egyptian oppression. In the wilderness, the former slaves found themselves in the midst of change; they had new circumstances, new diet, new problems, and new needs. Did they humble themselves and accept their new environment as an opportunity for further growth? No! They murmured and complained, longing for the leeks and garlic of Egypt; they longed for their old pleasures.

Certainly, there was some pain connected with the wilderness phase of their journey, but if the Israelites rightly had divided the pleasure and the pain in each new situation, they would have made it into the Promised Land as God originally had planned. Instead, out of their spiritual immaturity, they refused to suffer the loss of old pleasures and to look for the new pleasures of God's Glory, *Torah*-Truth, Manna, Water, and Fire, which God gave them in their wilderness journey.

God provided supernatural Water, accompanied with the sweetness of the Honey and the fragrance of the Oil. The supernatural Bread which He rained down from Heaven also had an invisible anointing on it. Yet, the Israelites never humbled themselves to find the Honey that was in the Water or the Oil that was flowing out of the Rock. Neither did they discern nor receive the invisible Strength and Power hidden in the Manna. How different their story would have been had they matured enough to have humbled themselves and to have given up their longings for the old pleasures so that they could have enjoyed the new pleasures that God had given them.

We have had to practice this Principle as a church. With each new growth of our congregation, we have had to move out of our present building into something larger. Each move has been painful, for it has required that we relinquish the comfortable pleasure of our former environment. Having to adjust to a new building always is painful, for it demands that the long-standing members maintain humility and willingness to seek new pleasures in a new situation. The new pleasures are in seeing new people come in and begin to grow in God.

Had we not have been willing to make the necessary changes, we never would have attained the growth we now have as a church.

We must grow in grace. The word *grace* means gratitude. We must mature so that we can turn away from the old pleasure and look upon the new with gratitude. To our darkened eyes, any new change looks like a painful thing, but we must learn to divide as God does. Painful change actually is an opportunity for growth and a preparation for new

pleasure. A grateful attitude prepares us to receive pleasure in the new situation. Without grace or gratitude, we will miss the pleasure, for we will reject the changed situation which God uses as a vehicle for bringing us new pleasure.

If we refuse to grow up, we experience only pain in a new situation and end up murmuring and complaining, a sure testimony of our own spiritual immaturity.

### **C. The Ability to Wait Patiently for Pleasure to Come**

The third step to maturity teaches us a willingness to wait for pleasure to come. It is juvenile to expect instant pleasure all the time. In fact, half the joy of anything lies in the anticipation of it. When we grow up, we are willing to wait for God to reveal the new pleasure hidden in each new situation.

These Principles work in the natural realm and in the spiritual realm. When God brings us to new spiritual places, they seem painful and uncomfortable, as new places often do. Then, we must be careful lest our little father-god get on the throne and pronounce, "There is no pleasure here. It is all pain." We need to bear in mind that our little god's will comes from the Serpent's will which is filled with deceit and death. In any situation, the declaration of "all pain — no pleasure" is not God's Judgment in the matter. God brings us to new places for our good and for His Glory.

The Truth is that there is pleasure in each new circumstance if we are willing to wait for it to come. Waiting means pain because we no longer can do exactly what we have done in the past. Waiting means that we must endure the newness and strangeness until the LORD makes us comfortable in the situation.

In the process of growing up, we cannot by-pass the union of pleasure and pain. As we grow, we must learn to accept the limitation of our pleasure and to be satisfied with the loss of old pleasure and humble oneself to look for new pleasure and to have patience to wait for the pleasure to come.

We can tell when our eye of patience is still unopened, still filled with darkness, still void of Understanding, for we will feel impatience coming up in our heart. Impatience is another form of anger; it is another means by which we try to redeem ourselves out of seemingly painful situations.

## **II. Evidences of Emotional and Spiritual Immaturity**

By looking more closely at the workings of impatience, we can learn to recognize, quickly, this degree of anger and immaturity in our own life.

### **A. Low Tolerance for Frustration**

Our darkened eyes make it impossible for us to endure for any length of time in uncomfortable circumstances. Impatience blindly cries, "Since I can see no reason for this pain, it is unreasonable to expect me to accept it." We cannot tolerate discomfort because we have no idea of what God is doing. Refusal to accept God's Headship in the trying and traumatic experiences of life is our anger striking out at God.

Our lack of understanding why we suffer in dark places does not give us the right to accuse God. We need to keep our confidence in Him, continue to claim the promise that "all things work together for good," and realize that the last chapter has not yet been written. God is not through with the matter. Impatience is what makes us accuse God. When our pleasure syndrome has been contraried, we show our low level of tolerance for frustration and, thus, our immaturity, by striking out at God or at others. If we have a low tolerance of frustration, we always say that the fault is with the other person.

### **B. Annoyance**

Annoyance because of delay is another form of impatient anger. We all have watched people impatiently waiting, tapping their toes, drumming their fingers, looking around in apparent irritation. We have been guilty of these actions ourselves. Such behaviour is simply an evidence that our little god is thinking the whole world should revolve around him, and when it does not, he is annoyed.

We should ask ourselves how we behave when we are driving down the street and come upon someone who is driving slow and holding up traffic. Our immature annoyance will cause us to say to ourselves, "Where does he think he is going — to a funeral? He ought to move that old heap off the road. I've got an appointment to meet." At the

first opportunity, we step on the gas pedal and race around him, thinking, “There, I fixed you.” But, did we “fix” the other person? No, not really. We just fixed ourself. Our blood pressure went up; tension tightened our neck; and our adrenal gland swung into operation because we were annoyed.

Frustration comes out of our inability to separate pain and pleasure. We think we are on the pleasure side when we go speeding around a slow driver, but we actually are on the pain side. We are the one who ends up feeling nervous and sick.

### **C. Anxiety**

Anxiety is a painful or apprehensive uneasiness of mind, usually over an impending or anticipated ill. Since anxiety is an expression of impatient anger, the presence of it in our life is another indication of our spiritual immaturity.

When we are confronted with what looks like a painful situation, our anxiety will cause us to do one of two things. We will either fight or flee. Because of our unwillingness to accept the reality of pain in our little world of pleasure, we sometimes try to redeem ourself from certain situations by running away from them. We may go so far as to deceive ourself into thinking that we are being led by the Will of God. What we actually are doing is bypassing a situation that God has provided for our growth. The desire to run away from pain is in all of us until we grow up and know that we never can escape pain, regardless of how we may refuse to face up to it. In some other situations, we may decide to stay and fight, thinking that the fight will bring pleasure and that we can, in that way, escape the pain.

Whether we let anxiety provoke us to run from pain or to stand and resist it, reality still must be faced somewhere down the road. Only as we grow up spiritually are we willing to face it as it comes.

### **D. Grandiosity**

Grandiosity is characterized by the affectation of grandeur or splendour or by absurd exaggeration. People who are afflicted with this class of impatient anger are totally unreasonable. Their grandiose idea that the whole world revolves around them provides constant nourishment for their feelings of impatience.

A grand self-image drives people to set goals that are too high for them to reach at a particular point of their growth and development. When they fail to attain these high goals, they react with feelings of anger which they express in the following statements: “I am worthless. I am disgusted. What is the use? I never will be able to do anything right.”

By contrast, a person who has begun to mature, when he is faced with disappointments, will say, “I know that God is the Head over all things. He wants to teach me new growth of faith and trust in Him. He will get me out of this predicament.” A spiritually mature person finds pleasure in waiting and anticipating how God is going to redeem him out of his difficulties.

### **E. Perfectionism**

Perfectionism is another form of impatient anger. By comparing ourself with others, we often come up with the idea that we are better than the other person. We can do things twice as well and twice as fast — at least, we think we can. It is a terrible shock to find out that we are not a god after all. The immature person’s failure swings his pendulum to the opposite extreme. Instead of claiming his former perfections, he starts saying, “I am good for nothing.” So what is new about that? None of us have any goodness apart from God; but, for some immature people, this is a shocking experience, too painful to accept.

### **F. Daydreaming**

Daydreaming or wishful thinking is another form of playing god. In our inner collection of thoughts, we group our ideas together; set the stage; choose our characters; decide how the play will begin; how every act should go; and how it all will end. There never is a question of who the hero is. It always is *self*. Daydreaming is our rebellion and anger against our world of reality. We play mental games, hoping to escape that which we are not grown up enough to accept.

## **G. Isolation**

Isolation is a manifestation of impatient anger. Rather than our facing problems which arise when we are in close association and, then, honestly dealing with our own flesh, we frequently seek relief from the pain of seeing our flesh by isolating ourselves from others.

Separation from others may keep one's flesh from being exposed publicly, but it will not make the flesh go away.

## **H. Sensitivity**

Sensitivity causes us to exaggerate all our personal relationships and dwell upon a situation, mulling over it until it becomes greatly enlarged; finally, our sensitivity expresses itself in a full cup of deceitful anger. We say "I am so sensitive" because we do not want to say "I am impatient; I am angry." *Sensitive* sounds more acceptable to the flesh than *angry*.

We are rejecting God's Headship in our life when we resist the circumstances and experiences which bring pain and suffering to us. We call it sensitivity, but it really is our lack of maturity being expressed through our impatience. Until we recognize sensitivity for what it is — anger — we cannot properly repent and forsake these immature expressions.

## **I. Impulsiveness**

Impulsiveness is another form of impatient anger. Many people start serving God out of the impulsiveness of their fleshly nature, but they are ready to quit as soon as fleshly zeal runs out. Because people anticipate pleasure, they impulsively grasp at a job, little realizing that pain accompanies pleasure in all that is done in this life. But those who learn to endure the pain find that new pleasure is their reward.

How many of God's people have laid down their Cross and quit when God permitted a little pain to touch their ministry? It was the impulsiveness of their flesh that caused them to pick up the mantle of service in the beginning, and impulsiveness is angry pride running ahead of God.

We often turn this class of impatience against others when we think they are not performing as they should. Then, impulsively, we rush in to take over and show them how the job should be done.

Any good building must be planned carefully and erected skillfully. This is just as true in the spiritual realm as it is in the natural realm. Works that are started impulsively cannot endure the test of time.

## **J. Defiance**

Defiance is what causes us to reject others. We sometimes feel rejected, unloved, and unappreciated by a friend when the real problem is that we subconsciously and unconsciously are rejecting the other person. By the time our anger gets up into our conscious mind, we have transferred it to the other person and concluded that he hates us and is rejecting us. By transferring our guilt, we can keep our anger and feel sorry for ourselves at the same time.

The projection and transferral of subconscious and unconscious feelings occur because we refuse to acknowledge our own angry emotions. For example, sometimes our little god syndrome causes us to feel that we should be receiving more attention from our friend or pastor, but we push our anger down into the subconscious and unconscious parts of our being. In a little while these angry vibrations come up again, only this time we do not recognize them as being our own. We start putting the blame on the other person. We can do this even with God by saying that He does not love us, when all the time it is our little god who created our angry feelings.

When we feel that someone does not like us, it is time for us to pray and ask God to show us what we do not like about that person. If we sincerely love and appreciate someone, it is a very rare situation, indeed, if that person does not return our affection.

## **K. Dependence**

Perverved dependence is an expression of impatient anger. We definitely are supposed to learn and cultivate a dependent attitude toward Jesus Christ! He must become our Source of Light, Life and motivation. Thus, when we

cling dependently to other human beings for guidance or when we hold onto our old ways of receiving inspiration and thrill instead of trusting Jesus to meet our needs in these areas, we are manifesting impatience with God.

The flesh finds fasting, praying, and seeking God painful. It seems much easier to hash our problems over with a friend and to depend on him to show us how to go than it is to get down on our knees and start crying, “Oh, Jesus, open my blind eyes. Show me what to do in this matter. Show me Your Will.” It seems much easier to read a book, listen to music, talk on the phone, or go shopping than it is to take the Bible and go before the LORD, saying, “Dear Jesus, feed my hungry soul today. Give me Bread that is convenient for me. Give me the portion of Your Light and Life that I need today.”

The desired growth in God comes only as we confess our impatient anger and let Jesus convert our angry, dependent energy into righteousness which, when it is returned to us, strongly manifests its utter dependence on Jesus, regardless of the cost in pain and suffering to our flesh.

## **L. Independence**

Independence is another demonstration of impatient anger. Flesh is like the pendulum on a clock — it loves to swing to extremes. If it is not swinging on the dependent side of the Scales, it usually can be found over on the independent side. Again, God wants us to learn the lesson of independence from all creatures, but He wants us to learn it in His Purposive Will.

Until we attain spiritual maturity in God, we need leaders and teachers to instruct us in the way. When we independently refuse to come under the headship of those whom God has chosen and anointed to be our leaders, we actually are rejecting God’s Headship over us and asserting our independence from Him.

This type of behaviour can only be described as the height of ignorance. How can puny little creatures, such as we, be presumptuous enough to draw up a declaration of independence from our Creator? Such a declaration amounts to a request for Death, for there is no true Life apart from God and His Will.

Our impatience of the flesh shows our need for further growth emotionally and spiritually. Until our eye of patience is opened and flooded with Light, we behave with the characteristic juvenile behaviour of being impatient in the face of every circumstance of life. We know, of course, that growing up is a lifetime project, for growth is a process of change. However, since patience increases as our growth increases, it is possible to discern, at least in a measure, how far we have come in our journey toward maturity in God by how patient we are.

The first sign that spiritual development has taken place is seen in our ability to accept, willingly, both pleasure and pain. The second sign of growth is seen when we can be satisfied with the loss of old pleasure and can humble ourself to seek new pleasure in God’s Purposive Will. The third sign of growth is seen in our ability to wait patiently for pleasure to come, according to God’s Purposive Will. If we are honest, all of us must admit that we have room for growth in all these areas.

# Chapter Twelve

## How To Deal With Anger

The Tree of Anger with its aboveground anger and its hidden root system of underground anger is a great Tree. Without a doubt, anger is one of our greatest problems, for it affects and influences practically all our verbal expressions, actions, deeds, and our every reaction to the world around us.

Regardless of how large our Tree of Anger is, our condition is not hopeless because God's Word shows us how to rid ourself of anger.

### I. Acknowledge the Condition

Very often God, in His Faithfulness, uses dreams to show us our condition. When we sleep, the mind's conscious lid is removed, and the feelings of our subconscious mind rise to the surface. Angry feelings personify themselves in our dreams, so it is easy, if we are honest, to identify their meanings. It is possible, of course, to dream because of physical reasons, such as illness or overeating before going to bed; hence, we cannot say that *all* dreams are from God. Nevertheless, God does use dreams to speak to us and show us what lies hidden in the depths of our frozen anger.

Sometimes our dreams are bad. For example, we may see ourself beating someone, pounding on them, or even killing them. Dreams of this nature are expressions of the frozen anger and wrath we have toward someone. The person in our dream may not be the individual with whom we are angry, but the hostility manifested in the dream indicates the presence of suppressed anger down in our frozen cesspool.

As we already have stated, the person or thing that we vent our anger upon may not necessarily be the object of our anger. When we fail to turn our anger loose against the party who displeased us, we shove it down into the frozen state to be released later in a situation that may be totally unrelated to the original provocation.

If the energy of anger is not changed, it will come out against someone, sometime, somewhere. Or it may finally be released against the person with whom we were angry in the beginning. Our anger can keep building up in the subconscious and unconscious realms until a final offense ignites the rage which releases the anger that has been pent up for weeks, months, and sometimes years.

There is no cure or lasting relief from anger until we acknowledge our condition. The medical world can give only a measure of temporary relief. The very act of having to acknowledge one's problem and being forced to face the reality of its existence relieves some of a patient's inward pressures. This solution is just a partial one, however, for even the most skilled physician is unable to change the inward animosity of his patient. A doctor does not possess the power to convert anger from its destructive force into something beneficial and wholesome. Only God has the cure for anger.

### II. Seek God's Help in Prayer

Having a disturbing dream or waking up with a miserable, blue and depressed feeling for no apparent reason could indicate hidden anger. The way to the cure is to take the dream to the LORD in prayer. Only God can show us the true source of our anger, for much of it lies hidden within the frozen cesspool of the subconscious and unconscious levels of our will.

Each person has his own spiritual garden to clean out. We cannot depend upon others to do the job for us because they have their own gardens to weed. This is no small job, but as we keep working, it gets more and more exciting. It becomes fun to do our own seeking the LORD and allowing Him to cleanse our heart and will.

We would not think of planting a flower or vegetable garden and expect our friends to take care of it for us. So why should we expect others to weed our spiritual garden? It is up to us to get into our prayer closet and seek God, saying, "LORD, please show me the person with whom I am angry. Put Your Finger on the source of my problem. Let me see why I am feeling so depressed. Where did it all start?"

When something happening in our daily life triggers frozen anger down in the subconscious realm of our being so that it is released into the conscious and unconscious realms of our will, we find ourselves suddenly feeling as though the bottom has dropped out of life — that life no longer is worth living. Most of the time we are unaware of the origin of these negative and destructive thoughts and feelings. This is why we must seek the LORD's help. He alone is able to reveal the hidden sources and causes of our thoughts. Only God can guide us into the process of the cleansing of our corrupt and antagonistic heart and will.

### III. Pray for Understanding

We must learn to reason with God. We all are well experienced when it comes to reasoning and counseling ourselves with our darkened eyes which, at best, can produce only a confused and muddled picture. Sometimes we do not want to find the reason because we are enjoying the negative feelings of our anger. Groveling around in self-pity, depression, and negativism is a form of perverted pleasure, so sometimes we prefer to stay in a depressive state for a while longer. This type of behaviour can be likened to an emotional drunken spree. We have to get sobered up before we are ready to be reasonable with God.

God has invited us to reason with Him, saying, "Come now, and *let us reason together, saith the LORD*: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool" (Isaiah 1:18). Although our anger be as scarlet, it shall be white as snow. Although it be red like crimson, it shall be as wool.

As we already have seen, anger is a tremendous energy which, when it became corrupted with sin, took on a destructive form. It is possible for this energy to be cleansed and converted back into the constructive and Righteous Energy which God created it to be in the beginning. This conversion takes place through the process of confession and repentance. When we confess our anger to the LORD, His Blood cleanses us from that sin, and the portion of His Blood which formed the Sea of God's Forgetfulness carries the sin back behind God's Back where it is converted into snow and wool.

Snow speaks of God's Cold Humility Nature; wool speaks of His Hot Exaltation Nature. The two unlike elements of snow and wool, then, represent the two opposite Principles found in God Himself and in all He does.

Confessed scarlet and crimson sins can be returned to us as Humility Energy and Exaltation Energy. This is what God was talking about when He admonished us to reason with Him. God does not give confessed, misused, and abused energy back to us in the corrupt form in which we gave it to Him. He cleanses it and returns it to us in the form of Holy, Righteous Energy. Behind God's Back there is a tremendous "converter" which works to restore confessed corrupted energy to its original form. It is called God's Sea of Forgetfulness, which consists of Jesus Christ's Resurrected Blood, pictured by the scapegoat blood on the Day of Atonement. Sin is cleansed and forgotten, but the cleansed energy is given back to the penitent soul. When this converted energy is returned to us, we can use it for good in our own life and for good in the lives of others. The negative, destructive force of fleshly anger brings about unhappiness, sorrow, and grief. Converted, positive energy, however, can be used for the Glory of God and the happiness of all concerned.

As we reason with God about our sins, we realize how much precious time we have wasted on anger sprees, some of which have dragged on for years. Our anger could have been brought under control quickly and sent back behind God's Back into His Sea of Forgetfulness if we just had confessed it when the first bubbles of displeasure started coming up inside us. Instead, we gave way to our anger, and it continued to grow into indignation, rage, fury, and, finally, into its worst stage — wrath. Had we done business with God in the first stage of irritation, we would have had all that clean, powerful energy to pour out in praise and worship to God, in service and work for God, and in spreading happiness to others.

As we pray for understanding, we will realize what our anger is doing to our relationship with God, and we will understand how seriously we are sabotaging ourselves. Anger works havoc in our physical body. When anger's destructive energy is released within the body, it provokes strong physical reactions which, over a period of time, can result in serious chronic diseases which can even destroy life. Anger also works against us mentally and

emotionally. The repercussions of hidden anger go out like giant waves to touch every area of our life. It is time for us to reason with God; it is time we become reasonable in regard to this matter of anger. Common sense alone tells us to forsake this most destructive force.

#### **IV. Deal with Anger**

Christians deal with their sinful anger by pleading the Blood of Jesus Christ against it. It is much easier to handle anger in its seed form than after it has grown into a mature tree. This is why it is important for us to deal with agitation in the very beginning. If we confess and acknowledge the displeasure of a thing, pleading Jesus Christ's Efficacious Blood with its Cleansing Power against it, we have dealt with anger in the right way. We can spare ourself much grief and needless waste of energy if we promptly acknowledge our condition; seek God's help immediately; be reasonable with God about our anger; and deal with it the moment it comes up.

This process works beautifully in the seed stage of anger because the results are immediate. On the other hand, dealing with frozen anger in the cesspool stage requires more patience in seeking God and waiting on Him for the revelation of the true source of our anger. Because we are dealing with anger in its invisible form, it is essential for us to have God's Revelation in order to be able to discern it. Once we have seen the source of our problem, we immediately should start the process of repentance and confession before God the Father and our LORD Jesus Christ, claiming, by faith, the Father's Unbegotten Resurrection Glory, which will melt our frozen anger and claiming, by faith, the shed Blood of Jesus with its Cleansing Power, which will convert our scarlet and crimson angry energy into pure, righteous Snow and Wool Energy.

## Chapter Thirteen

### Be Angry And Sin Not

Anger, in its original form, is simply aggressive energy. It is a valuable weapon and an ornament of beauty when it is under God's Sovereign Control. God has no desire to destroy, totally, the workings of this energy in the hearts, wills, and lives of His people. He merely wants us to see our sinful anger, confess it, and repent so that this misused, abused energy can be carried behind His Back where it can be converted into the Righteous Energy it was before sin corrupted it. Without converted, Righteous Energy, we are unable to war effectively against the forces of the world, the flesh, and the Devil.

It is evident, then, that not all anger is sinful anger. God has a Holy, Pure, Righteous Anger which has nothing to do with sin. This is the class of anger that Paul had in mind when he said, "Be ye angry, and sin not:..." (Ephesians 4:26).

Not one of us is perfect in this matter of anger, but we still can be sincere and hope for change. Understanding is half the battle, and once we learn the basic motivation of our anger, we can learn how to handle it. Learning is change; growing is change. Christians who are interested in reaching spiritual maturity must learn, change, and grow in regard to anger, life's basic problem.

We must learn how to discern the source of our anger. There is nothing wrong with being angry when the anger is righteous, godly anger against sin, against moral wrong, or against the Devil himself. Only after the eyes of our will have been opened and filled with God's Light of Understanding can we possibly discern whether the source of our anger is righteous or sinful.

Sinful anger is manifested in an evil manner against God because the eyes of our human will are filled with darkness and ignorance, because our little god syndrome is asserting itself, and because our Pleasure and Pain Principles are confused. Everything is out of balance inside us, so we travel from visible anger down into the depths of invisible anger, where we finally dump much of our sinful energy into the frozen cesspool that lies deep within the subconscious and unconscious levels of our will.

We must bear in mind that all Christians have two natures —a carnal nature and a spiritual nature. All people come into the world with a fleshly, selfish, sinful anger which belongs to their old carnal natures from Adam the First. The Pride of Redemption down in man's human will produces the corrupted fruits of hatred, wrath, strife, envy, and murder. The Apostle Paul exhorted Christians to put off the old man, the old nature, the carnal man.

I therefore, the prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk worthy of the vocation wherewith ye are called,... **That ye put off concerning the former conversation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful lusts;** And be renewed in the spirit of your mind; (Ephesians 4:1,22,23).

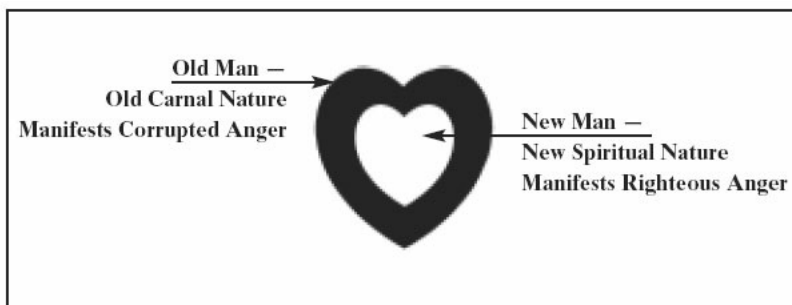
We all are born with corrupt anger, and this anger is not all brought under the control of Jesus Christ the moment we accept Him as our Saviour. Even after we have been saved, we continue to exercise angry independence from God. In subtle ways we still try to establish our own paradise, and we seek to rule our own life from our own throne, as we act like a little father-god, a little son-god, and a little spirit-god. We are determined, down in our will, that nothing shall disturb our pleasure-kingdom, for anger is part of man's apron of fig leaves which Adam and Eve sewed together to protect their naked wills against God's Will. But, this apron of anger which we have inherited must be put off, and we must crown Jesus Christ as King on the throne of our will if we are to overcome the mighty Tree of Anger which is so clearly evident in us all.

We must put off the old man, the old nature, which we have inherited from Adam the First, and we must put on the New Man, the Spiritual Man, who is created in the Image and Likeness of Christ Jesus.

And that ye **put on the new man, which after God is created in righteousness and true holiness.** Wherefore putting away lying, speak

every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another. Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: Neither give place to the devil.... **Let all bitterness, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil speaking, be put away from you, with all malice:** And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Christ's sake hath forgiven you (Ephesians 4:24-27,31,32).

The two natures, the old corrupt one and the New Spiritual One, dwell together in the heart of a Christian.



Sinful anger comes out of the Old Heart; righteous anger comes out of the Spiritual Heart which is created in Righteousness and true Holiness. The Spirit of God within us gets angry with sin, but not with the sinner. This is the kind of anger we experience out of our New Nature. If we are going to war against sin, we must learn to hate it just as God hates it.

The anger of our Spiritual Man differs greatly from the anger of our natural man. Fleshly anger makes us ugly and hateful. It makes God a foe instead of a Friend. It causes us to make rash statements which we later regret. Fleshly anger is destructive and wicked and works no good in our life or in the lives of others.

Holy Anger, on the other hand, works together with the Holy Spirit of God and operates according to the Will of God. Righteous Anger quotes the Scriptures and uses the Word of God to war against sinful practices. Righteous Anger works for the good of all concerned and is constructive in its purpose. Holy Hatred does *not* sin; it works to further the Word of God in our life and in the lives of others. Righteous Anger is vented against things that are morally wrong in the sight of God.

Let us take an example of sinful anger (which is manifested when the flesh is displeased in some way) in contrast to Righteous Anger (which is provoked by people transgressing a moral Principle). The story, which is our example, is recorded in the Book of Numbers, chapters twenty-two through twenty-five.

As the children of Israel journeyed to Canaan's Land, they had to pass by the territory of the Moabites and Midianites. Balak, king of the Moabites, greatly concerned over the magnitude of these invaders, sent messengers to solicit the help of Balaam, the Prophet of God.

Come not therefore, I pray thee, curse me this people; for they are too mighty for me: peradventure I shall prevail, that we may smite them, and that I may drive them out of the land: for I wot that he whom thou blessest is blessed, and he whom thou cursest is cursed (Numbers 22:6).

Balaam responded to the messengers by saying, "Get you into your land: for the LORD refuseth to give me leave to go with you." The King refused to accept Balaam's answer and sent more honourable princes of Moab to offer even greater rewards of honour and riches if Balaam would come and curse the children of Israel. That night, as Balaam sought God's Will in the matter, God said to him, "If the men come to call thee, rise up, and go with them; but yet the word which I shall say unto thee, that shalt thou do."

Balaam did not wait. Before the men came to him in the morning, as God had stipulated, Balaam rose up, saddled his ass, and went with the princes of Moab."

And God's anger was kindled because he went: and the angel of the LORD stood in the way for an adversary against him. Now he was riding upon his ass, and his two servants were with him. And the ass saw the angel of the LORD standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and the ass turned aside out of the way, and went into the field: and Balaam smote the ass, to turn her into the way (Numbers 22:22,23).

Here we see God's Righteous and Holy Anger being manifested because Balaam chose to take his own will. Balaam went with the princes of Moab in direct disobedience to the conditions which God had established for his

going. In order to stop Balaam in his willful way, God sent the Angel of the LORD with a drawn sword to stop him. But, Balaam was so blinded by his own human will that he failed to see even what his beast of burden clearly saw. The ass turned aside and went into the field, trying to avoid the Angel with the sword. So, Balaam beat the poor animal to force her back in the way. When the ass pressed close to the wall in an effort to squeeze past the Angel, Balaam's foot was crushed, and his anger increased so that he beat the animal still more. Finally, the Angel moved into a narrow place where there was no turning away to either side. At this point, the LORD opened the mouth of the ass so that she could speak, and he opened Balaam's eyes so that he could see.

And when the ass saw the angel of the LORD, she fell down under Balaam: **and Balaam's anger was kindled**, and he smote the ass with a staff. And **the LORD opened the mouth of the ass**, and she said unto Balaam, What have I done unto thee, that thou hast smitten me these three times?... Then **the LORD opened the eyes of Balaam, and he saw the angel of the LORD** standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and he bowed down his head, and fell flat on his face. And the angel of the LORD said unto him, Wherefore hast thou smitten thine ass these three times? behold, I went out to withstand thee, because thy way is perverse before me: And the ass saw me, and turned from me these three times: unless she had turned from me, surely now also I had slain thee, and saved her alive. And Balaam said unto the angel of the LORD, I have sinned; for I knew not that thou stoodest in the way against me: now therefore, if it displease thee, I will get me back again (Numbers 22:27,28,31-34).

God's display of Righteous Anger was because of Balaam's disobedience. But, Balaam displayed unrighteous anger because his faithful beast of burden was aggravating him. So, while God's Anger was directed against disobedience to Him, Balaam's anger was directed toward an innocent animal which was displeasing her master. Balaam's anger had nothing to do with God's Moral Law. He was angry at the animal who seemed to be frustrating his plans and hindering his speedy journey toward wealth and prosperity.

Although Balaam went in God's Permissive Will, the words he prophesied really were from God. He spoke tremendous things, some of which will not be fulfilled until after the Battle of Armageddon. Balaam did right in delivering the correct Prophecies and Messages from God. When King Balak insisted that the Prophet place a curse against the children of Israel, Balaam answered with God's Words, saying, "And God said unto Balaam, Thou shalt not go with them; thou shalt not curse the people: for they are blessed" (Numbers 22:12) And again Balaam said, "How shall I curse, whom God hath not cursed? or how shall I defy, whom the LORD hath not defied?" (Numbers 23:8).

God clearly established the following Principle with Balaam: No man can curse what God has blessed. Israel stood on God's blessing side, not on the judgment side. Therefore, there was no way the Prophet could pronounce a curse upon her.

Behold, I have received commandment to bless: and he hath blessed; and I cannot reverse it. He hath not beheld iniquity in Jacob, neither hath he seen perverseness in Israel: the LORD his God is with him, and the shout of a king is among them (Numbers 23:20,21).

All would have gone well with Balaam had he stopped there, but he did not stop. In referring to the sureness of God's ultimate Judgment against all sin and sinners, the Epistle of Jude has the following words to say concerning Balaam:

Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and **ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward**, and perished in the gainsaying of Core (Jude 1:11).

This Scripture reveals the weakness of the Prophet Balaam. In spite of God's Prophetic Gift that operated through him, Balaam was greedy for reward; he was eager for Balak's gold and silver and honour.

The writer of the Book of Jude warns us about people who run after the error of Balaam. Since he could not place a curse against God's chosen people, Balaam did the next best thing. He knew that the only way to get God's curse to come upon the children of Israel was to encourage them to sin, for sin automatically placed them on the Judgment Side of God's Scales. God's Judgment would act as a curse on them.

Balaam's error was in the advice he gave to King Balak. The Prophet said, in so many words, "King Balak, I cannot curse God's people, but I can tell you how to entice them to sin and that will get them into trouble with God. Send your most attractive women in among the Israelites and let them entice the men to sin. God has forbidden His people to marry or to have anything to do with the strangers in the land. So, if you can get them to disobey God, then God's Anger will be stirred, and He will judge and punish them for their sin." And, that is exactly what happened.

And Israel abode in Shittim, **and the people began to commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab**. And they called the people unto the sacrifices of their gods: and the people did eat, and bowed down to their gods. **And Israel joined himself unto Baal-peor: and the**

**anger of the LORD was kindled against Israel.** And the LORD said unto Moses, Take all the heads of the people, and hang them up before the LORD against the sun, that the fierce anger of the LORD may be turned away from Israel (Numbers 25:1-4).

God had a moral reason for being angry. He was totally justified in His angry Judgment of the sinners. He would not have been the One and only true God had He permitted His chosen people to bow down in worship before idols made of metal, wood, and stone.

The children of Israel were not innocent victims of ignorance. They knew better. They repeatedly had experienced God's Supernatural Power that had thrust them out of Egypt and had taken them across the Red Sea and had supplied all their needs throughout their wilderness journey. Furthermore, when the Law was given to Moses on Mount Sinai, they visibly had seen and heard a portion of God's Glory and Power. They had heard when God had given His Oral Word, and they carried with them the Tables of Stone inscribed with His Written Word. The very first Law was "I am the LORD thy God," and the second Law was "Thou shalt have no other gods before me." Thus, the Israelites were an enlightened people.

The LORD's Anger reached the wrathful stage when Israel stoutly refused to humble herself in the face of the LORD's angry Judgment and when she persisted in rebelliously resisting God's Laws of Holiness by openly defying their God-given leader, Moses.

And, behold, **one of the children of Israel came and brought unto his brethren a Midianitish woman in the sight of Moses, and in the sight of all the congregation of the children of Israel,** who were weeping before the door of the tabernacle of the congregation (Numbers 25:6).

The Israelite who came to flaunt his Midianitish woman deliberately in the face of Moses and Aaron and directly in front of the Tabernacle with its worshippers was Zimri, the son of Salu, a prince of a chief house among the Simeonites (Numbers 25:14).

Moses was speechless on this occasion because he himself had a Midianitish wife. Zimri felt justified and self-righteous in his anger. By the very openness of his disobedience of God's Command, he was saying, "I have holy anger. I am righteous in this thing. There stands Moses who is telling us that we cannot marry a Midianitish woman, and yet he himself has done the same thing. I am just as holy as you, Moses, and I will prove to you that God will permit me to have this woman, just as He has permitted you to have your Midianitish wife."

Moses never lifted his voice in his own defense. If he had an answer, he did not give it because the whole matter involved him. Moses simply committed himself unto the LORD Who judges all men righteously."

Zimri's anger was neither holy nor righteous. He was angry because his little god syndrome told him that he needed this particular woman for pleasure in his life and that he had just as much right to have her as Moses had to have his wife. But, did he?

Let us consider Moses' situation first. When Moses had fled from Egypt for the preservation of his life, he found himself in the desert land of Midian. Forty years of his life were spent herding Jethro's flocks on the backside of the desert. Jethro was a believer and a Priest of God. Later, after Moses had become the recognized leader of the children of Israel and was en route to Canaan's Land, Jethro ministered some good spiritual advice which Moses heeded (Exodus 18:1-27). While Moses was in exile in the land of Midian, he took one of Jethro's daughters to be his wife. She was a Midianite, but she was not a heathen. She was a believer in God. Scripture shows that she performed the rite of circumcision on their son, the rite which Moses had neglected to do until it almost cost him his life (Exodus 4:23-26).

Zimri's situation was entirely different. He stood as a "son of the Law," in covenant relationship with God; he was a princely leader among the people and knew well God's injunction concerning marriage with the heathen of the land. Disregarding the many daughters of Israel from whom he could have chosen a wife, Zimri cast his eyes upon the women of Midian and made his choice from among the heathen.

An obvious Moral Principle was involved here. What Zimri did that day was a tremendous demonstration of carnal, sinful anger. He wanted to prove something to the entire congregation. His actions said, "Look, Israel, Moses is doing us a great injustice. He is married to a Midianitish woman, so we can marry them, too. There is nothing wrong with it. He is being morally unjust; we have a right to be angry about it."

Zimri took the woman into his tent in the sight of all those witnesses, while Moses stood speechless. Moses' little son-god did not mount the throne to assert his redemptive power. Instead, he humbled himself in the face of the unjust accusation. Without a doubt, Moses prayed, for that was his practice whenever trouble arose in the camp. He knew that only God could undertake and redeem the situation. And, the LORD was faithful to raise up a redeemer

for the leader and the people.

**And when Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron the priest, saw it, he rose up from among the congregation, and took a javelin in his hand; And he went after the man of Israel into the tent, and thrust both of them through, the man of Israel, and the woman through her belly.** So the plague was stayed from the children of Israel. And those that died in the plague were twenty and four thousand (Numbers 25:7-9).

Phinehas saw the injustice of Zimri's angry attitude and moved quickly into action. Rushing into the tent, he thrust the spear down through both of their bodies, killing them while they were in the very act of sin. Then, all of Israel was invited to come in and see the judgment of these two who had died in the guiltiness of their fornication.

This was a matter of morally just anger. God anointed Phinehas to mete out His Holy, Righteous Judgment which destroyed the wicked sinners and justified the righteous Moses.

Holy anger for a right Principle, executed with the right spirit, will stay the plague of God's Judgment and reward the one who administers it. The sins of natural whoredom and spiritual whoredom were widespread in Israel, for 24,000 people were stricken with God's judgmental plague.

And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, **Phinehas, the son of Aaron the priest, hath turned my wrath away from the children of Israel, while he was zealous for my sake among them,** that I consumed not the children of Israel in my jealousy. **Wherefore say, Behold, I give unto him my covenant of peace: And he shall have it, and his seed after him, even the covenant of an everlasting priesthood; because he was zealous for his God, and made an atonement for the children of Israel** (Numbers 25:10-13).

When Phinehas drove the javelin through the bodies of Zimri and his Midianitish woman, he was exhibiting jealous anger for the LORD's sake. And, God honoured this man who came out with Holy Anger. Phinehas' anger was righteous because it was provoked by the breaking of a Moral Principle. Because Phinehas redeemed God's Commandment before the eyes of the people, God promised him a great reward.

These few chapters in the Book of Numbers revealed four classic examples of anger: two of them relate to Holy Anger and two relate to carnal anger. God's Anger in connection with Balaam's deliberate disobedience to His Command was Righteous and Holy because a Moral Principle was involved. Balaam's angry mistreatment of his innocent animal, whose spiritual eyesight was better than his own, was a display of carnal and destructive energy. The ass had broken no Moral Principle; the Prophet acted out of anger simply because his own human will was displeased.

The anger which Zimri cast into the face of his leader Moses was unjust and fleshly, and it brought God's quick Judgment upon him and his Midianitish woman. Phinehas' anger was Righteous and Holy because it was motivated by the insult and direct disobedience to a Moral Principle of God's Law.

Carnal, sinful, destructive, abused, and misused angry energy demands God's Judgment and Retribution. However, not all anger is sinful, and not all anger brings a person under God's Judgment. Anger is justified when it is directed against an offense against God's Moral Principles. This class of anger is Righteous, Holy, and acceptable to God. It is even commendable. The LORD rewards those who are angry for His Sake.

The problem most people have is learning to discern between the two classes of anger. We should ask ourselves what is producing our anger. We should say, "LORD, am I angry because my selfish ideas and plans and will are being frustrated? Is this agitation coming out of my little god syndrome? Or is anger coming up in my heart because of an offense against one of Your Moral Principles?" A person must have an honest, sincere heart to get to the crux of the matter.

We all manifest anger to one degree or another, in one way or another. The failure to express anger causes people to become abnormal and sick in their thinking. People who continuously suppress their anger over a protracted period of time, refusing to release or manifest it in any way, eventually become unable to feel emotion. These people turn to sadistic and masochistic practices. They murder, rape, torture, and punish, hoping to experience some sort of vicarious satisfaction and perverted pleasure through watching someone else suffer. They form some sort of emotional union and joining with those they torture. Some people kill because their anger is the hot, boiling, raging, uncontrollable stage of aboveground anger. But, the person who walks into a room and starts killing people for no apparent reason is suffering from frozen anger. He is expressing his invisible anger which has been suppressed for many years.

Ministers and counselors who work with people seeking spiritual help need to be aware of the depths of the frozen anger which lie within every person. Depths of anger are greater in some than in others. Knowing about the frozen cesspool within every heart and will helps us understand why some people seem unable to break loose and

express or experience any feelings. Their problem is this frozen cesspool deep within them. We need to deal patiently with these people, for help comes only after much prayer and frequent counselling.

It is easy for a minister to become discouraged when it seems that he is putting forth all the effort while the person seeking help stands passively by evidencing no reactions whatsoever. The counselor must have his eyes of mercy enlightened in his own will, or he will let his own fleshly anger become aggravated; and, finally, he will push that individual aside as a hopeless case. A person who, for years, has pushed anger down into the subconscious and unconscious levels of his heart and will must be awakened to his problem, and it takes time to do this. He must be instructed concerning the frozen, invisible cesspool of anger that is the root of his problem.

Anger can be either a corrupt and destructive energy at work or a Righteous and Constructive Force, depending on what motivates the anger in the first place. We are well acquainted with fleshly anger, for the Tree of Anger is no stranger to any of us. However, we need to become aware of the good kind of Anger, the kind God has and the kind He condones in His children. Holy Anger results from an offense being committed against one of God's Moral Laws.

As Christians, we are sojourners in this world. There are many enemies in the world, in our flesh, and from the Devil that must be fought and overcome in our journey back to God. We do not fight against flesh and blood. Our warfare is against spiritual forces. If we are to win, we must war with the LORD's Spiritual Weapons; and one of the most effective weapons is God's Holy Hatred and Anger against sin.

# Chapter Fourteen

## The Appeasement Of Justifiable Anger

Some people think a Christian must become a passive, insipid sort of person who never shows any anger. They think anger is unbecoming to a saint. This is not true. God becomes angry. In the Old Testament Dispensation, for example, many angry proclamations were made by God's Holy Prophets. And in the New Testament Dispensation, Jesus Christ saw His Father's House being turned into a place of merchandising, and He became so angry that He took a scourge and physically drove the moneychangers from the Temple. Righteous Anger is a reaction to an offense being committed against God's Moral Laws.

Holy Anger is quickly spent once repentance or the necessary adjustment is made. God Himself has made a way for His Holy Anger to be appeased. In the case of Holy Anger, there is no need for retaliation and certainly no place for carrying a grudge. Once Holy Anger has accomplished its intended purpose, it quickly subsides and is gone. This is not the nature of fleshly anger. Even after the provocation has been dealt with, fleshly anger seeks ways and means whereby it can further express itself. It does not want to quit. In fact, fleshly anger finds it hard to forget the incident.

### I. The Seven Basic Principles by Which God Works to Appease Justifiable Anger

God's Word is the place to look for an example of the appeasement of Justifiable Anger. In the Book of Numbers is an account of the flare-up of Righteous Anger that happened primarily between Moses and his brother Aaron, the High Priest.

Before going into this story, however, let us rehearse the seven basic Principles by which God operates, for it is through the use of these Principles that God's Anger is appeased. Everything that God does is governed and directed by the following seven basic Living Principles found within God Himself.

#### A. God's Headship Principle

God's Headship pertains to God's Government over our life. This Government includes the rightly dividing of pain and pleasure in our life. God allows some things to happen to us in order to show whether or not we accept the Headship-Principle of God's Will in our life.

#### B. God's Nature Principle

God permits painful experiences as well as pleasurable ones to come to us in order to reveal His Nature which is based on His Principles of Mercy, Love, Peace, Long-suffering — all qualities that belong to His Nature Principle.

#### C. God's Power Principle

Sometimes God lets us get to a completely helpless position. Then, He manifests His Power in such a way that we know all the redemption of the situation came from the Power of the Almighty God Who undertook in our behalf. That is God's Power Principle in operation.

#### D. God's Learning Principle

God has given gifts and callings that pertain to the teaching ministry, and these gifts enable teachers to hold up

the theoretical knowledge and witness of the Truth. However, teachers cannot *learn* their students the Truth. The inner learning process is a Work of the Holy Ghost, which relates to God's Learning Principle of taking theory and making it a personal, living experience.

#### **E. God's Rules of Conduct Principle**

God has placed in the Bible some Moral "Dos and Don'ts" which relate to His Principle that governs the conduct of His children. People who are not acquainted with these Moral Principles often fail to understand some of the personal convictions held by God's children. If all Christians properly understood the Moral Principles that God has established in His Word, there would be more consistency in Christian ranks along these lines.

#### **F. God's Methods of Operation Principle**

God is bound within His own Laws; therefore, He operates according to those methods that are in keeping with Himself. Once we learn God's Methods of Operation Principle, we know how to cooperate with God and how to work where He is working.

#### **G. God's Quality Principle**

God also operates by the Quality Principle. Every day, God, as well as man, uses the Quality Principle in making choices and judgments. The degree of excellence of any choice extends all the way from various levels of evil to good, from good to better, and from better to best. If we leave the choice to God, saying, LORD, I want the best; I want Your Highest Will," then God will make the choice for us. We are not able to choose which route is best for our life because we do not possess God's Eyesight. We cannot see as He sees. Only He is capable of making the right or best choice.

Several of these Principles are involved in the story of Moses and Aaron, but the Quality Principle is most evident. Now, let us pick up some of the background relating to the incident which provoked Moses' righteous anger in the tenth chapter of Leviticus.

### **II. The Example of Moses' Justifiable Anger**

God had given to Moses detailed instructions for the construction of the Old Testament Tabernacle. In the ninth chapter of Leviticus, Moses had just instituted, anointed, and consecrated Aaron to the office of High Priest. Moses was acting on God's behalf, for he alone had been given the Revelation Understanding of the Laws, the sacrifices, and all that pertained to the new house of worship. It was Moses' duty to train and instruct Aaron and his four sons and prepare them for their priestly ministry in the Tabernacle.

At this point, the Priests already had begun to offer blood sacrifices, and the Supernatural, Divine Fire from before the LORD had fallen upon the sacrifice on the Brazen Altar. The consumption of the sacrifice was a sign of God's acceptance and approval of the offering. When the presumptuous incident recorded in the tenth chapter of Leviticus occurred, Aaron and his sons had progressed in their instruction and experience only from the Brazen Altar, with its blood offering and the Divine Fire which descended there, to the Laver with its Water from the Rock, where they washed their hands and feet. Moses had not yet taught them how to serve at the Golden Altar.

However, two of Aaron's sons decided to by-pass their God-appointed leader, Moses. They should have busied themselves with the sin offering out in the Courtyard; instead, they thought to climb higher. Nadab and Abihu took it upon themselves to go into the Holy Place and minister at the Golden Altar.

What made them do such a drastic thing? They were drunk! This is evident from the strong words spoken against drunkenness immediately after this whole sorry affair took place. The LORD spoke specifically to Aaron, saying, "Do not drink wine nor strong drink, thou, nor thy sons with thee, when ye go into the tabernacle of the congregation, lest ye die: it shall be a statute for ever throughout your generations:" (Leviticus 10:9).

A person who is drunk (whether on alcohol, anger, or any other strong emotion) cannot think logically. Drunkenness causes the senses to become muddled and confused. A drunk person's judgment is poor because his powers of discernment and vision are blurred and distorted.

As Priests, the drunken Nadab and Abihu forgot all about their responsibilities to the sin offering. They knew

where the Incense was kept and presumptuously assumed that they knew all about the matter. They wanted to bypass their obligations in the Courtyard and minister in a higher realm, but they had no knowledge of how to bring the Incense offering to the Golden Altar because Moses had not yet given instructions concerning the order for the Holy Place.

The fact that they offered strange fire before the LORD shows that they obviously did not know that the Fire to be used at the Golden Altar was the same Fire that burned upon the Brazen Altar. In fact, all Fire used throughout the Tabernacle came from the Supernatural Fire that burned upon the Brazen Altar in the Courtyard.

There is only one True Fire, and that is the Fire of God's Holy Spirit. They did not know the mystery of the Holy Ghost lighting upon the Word (the LORD Jesus Christ, Whom the entire Tabernacle signified). The fulfillment of the Principle of the Fire of God's Spirit lighting upon the Word was seen at Christ's Baptism when the Holy Ghost, in the bodily form of a Dove, lit upon the Living Word (John 1:28-34).

Everything in the Mosaic Tabernacle was given to reveal the Person of Jesus Christ. Since every detail of construction, every sacrifice, every procedure, in fact everything that pertained to the Tabernacle and its service, depicted the LORD Jesus Christ in shadow and type, it is easy to see why the service of the Tabernacle had to be carried out precisely according to the Divine Instructions delivered to Moses.

Nadab and Abihu presumptuously destroyed a portion of Truth which God clearly had ordained to be set forth in their service in the Tabernacle; consequently, God's Judgment was immediately carried out against them.

**And Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, took either of them his censer, and put fire therein, and put incense thereon, and offered strange fire before the LORD, which he commanded them not. And there went out fire from the LORD, and devoured them, and they died before the LORD.** Then Moses said unto Aaron, This is it that the LORD spake, saying, I will be sanctified in them that come nigh me, and before all the people I will be glorified. And Aaron held his peace (Leviticus 10:1-3).

The boldness these two men assumed went beyond their priestly rights and betrayed their ignorance in thinking that God would accept an Incense offering lighted through the use of strange fire. The Hebrew word for *strange* means to turn aside, a foreigner, profane, to commit adultery, to come from another place. God's Word declares that their act was in direct disobedience to the Will of God; they "offered strange fire before the LORD, which he commanded them not." Consequently, Judgment Fire from the LORD devoured them, and they died before the LORD's Face. They sinned by offering strange fire; therefore, their punishment was by Fire.

Notice the point that Moses stressed in connection with this tragedy. "This is it that the LORD spake, saying, I will be sanctified in them that come nigh me, and before all the people I will be glorified." In one way or another, God is going to be sanctified, whether it be by blessing or by judgment.

The Hebrew word for *sanctified* means to make, pronounce, or observe; clean, consecrate, dedicate, hallow, to be or keep Holy. Nadab and Abihu had desecrated God's Holiness, but God *will be sanctified* in them that approach Him. The Holiness of God's Headship Principle was, in this case, established again through His immediate Judgment. God's Holy Headship was and always will be made known either by blessing or by judgment.

It is much better to come before God with a right spirit, as a living sacrifice; to walk up and down in God's Presence; and to manifest His Righteous Will. There can be no Oneness of Love Relationship with Jesus Christ until we willingly bow our knees in surrender and accept Him as our Head. Through obedience to His Will, we sanctify the LORD's Headship in our life. Then, our continual song of praise is, "Hallelujah! God is Just and Holy. He is Good and Kind. I delight in His Headship over me."

Nadab and Abihu manifested no signs of humility surrender toward God's Headship over them. They pushed aside God's primary leader, Moses, and they pushed aside God's secondary leader, Aaron, who was also their father. Aaron stood in Jesus Christ's stead because he had been instituted and consecrated into the office of High Priest; Moses stood as representative of God the Father. Yet, Nadab and Abihu dared to shove them both aside and run up to the Golden Altar with their strange fire. They assumed that any unholy fire (representing spirit) would do to reveal the Name of Jesus (pictured by the Incense). Only one Spirit can reveal Jesus Christ — the Holy Spirit of God; none other will do.

Leviticus, chapter ten, verse two, says that "there went out fire from the LORD," and devoured Aaron's two sons. This had to be the Fire of the LORD's Glory and not physical fire, for neither their robes nor their bodies were consumed.

**And Moses said unto Aaron, and unto Eleazar and unto Ithamar, his sons, Uncover not your heads, neither rend your clothes; lest ye die, and lest wrath come upon all the people: but let your brethren, the whole house of Israel, bewail the burning which the**

**LORD hath kindled.** And ye shall not go out from the door of the tabernacle of the congregation, lest ye die: for the anointing oil of the LORD is upon you. And they did according to the word of Moses. And the LORD spake unto Aaron, saying, Do not drink wine nor strong drink, thou, nor thy sons with thee, when ye go into the tabernacle of the congregation, lest ye die: it shall be a statute for ever throughout your generations: (Leviticus 10:6-9).

After the LORD had finished speaking, Moses gave a few further instructions related to the Priest's portion of the sacrifices. When his diligent search revealed that the sin offering of the goat had been burnt rather than eaten, Moses became angry with Aaron's two remaining sons, Eleazar and Ithamar. His anger on this occasion was righteous and justified because a Moral Principle was involved. Let us see what provoked righteous anger in God's servant.

And **Moses diligently sought the goat of the sin offering, and, behold, it was burnt: and he was angry with Eleazar and Ithamar, the sons of Aaron which were left alive, saying, Wherefore have ye not eaten the sin offering in the holy place, seeing it is most holy,** and God hath given it you to bear the iniquity of the congregation, to make atonement for them before the LORD? Behold, the blood of it was not brought in within the holy place: **ye should indeed have eaten it in the holy place, as I commanded** (Leviticus 10:16-18).

In order to portray the full picture of the Death, Burial, and Resurrection of Jesus Christ, God's Sin Offering, it was necessary to use a number of different sacrifices and to handle the flesh and the blood of these offerings in a variety of ways. In this case, two animals — a calf and a goat — were used to picture the fullness of the sin offering (Leviticus 9:2,15). After the Priest's hands were laid on the calf (the first sin offering) and after sins were confessed over the animal as a demonstration of sins being transferred to the sin-bearer, the calf was slain at the Brazen Altar and his dead body carried without the camp. The calf depicted Jesus Christ's Crucifixion on Golgotha's Hill, outside of Jerusalem.

Wherefore **Jesus also, that he might sanctify the people with his own blood, suffered without the gate.** Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach (Hebrews 13:12,13).

The slaying of the calf was not all the story. With this particular sin offering, a goat also was needed. Although he was slain as the calf was and his blood applied at the Great Altar, the goat's body was not carried without the camp. Certain portions of the goat's body were assigned to the High Priest and his sons to be eaten by them in the Holy Place of the Tabernacle.

The calf, whose body was buried outside the camp, represented the Crucifixion and Death of Jesus Christ. The goat, which was to be eaten by the Priests in the Holy Place, illustrated the Resurrected Christ. The Priest had the power to change the second goat into a living substance; he did it through the digestive process working in his body. As the dead goat was absorbed into the body of the living Priest, he became living substance again; only now he knew a higher form of life.

Here, in type, we see Jesus Christ coming up out of Death and Hell, joined to the Father's Unbegotten Resurrection Glory, and marching into the tomb to swallow up His Human Body which lay there. The Resurrected Christ swallowed up the humanity of the Crucified Christ. A higher form of Unbegotten Life swallowed up a lower form of Begotten Life. The Father's Unbegotten Life swallowed up the Son's Begotten Life.

Since Jesus Christ's Human Body was swallowed up by His Resurrected, Glorified Body, we know that we, too, shall have the experience of having our mortality being swallowed up by Christ's Immortality.

For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. **So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory** (1 Corinthians 15:53,54).

Jesus declared, "I lay down my life, that I might take it again" (John 10:17). Fulfillment of this promise came when the Father raised up the Soul of Jesus out of Death and Hell, put the Spirit of Jesus back together with His Soul, and crowned Him with His Spirit of Glory and Resurrection Power.

So will it be with us. At the time of death, as New Testament believers, our spirit and soul go back to God, and our body goes to the grave. When resurrection day comes, our spirit and soul, together with the portion of Resurrection Glory we attained during our lifetime on Earth, will return to Earth to swallow up our mortal body. Disobedient Death will be swallowed up by the LORD Jesus Christ's Obedient Life! Mortality will be swallowed up by the Father's Unbegotten Life in Christ's Immortality; in other words, a lower form of life will be swallowed up by a higher form of Life.

Moses clearly was justified in his anger because the burning of the goat, which should have been eaten by the Priests, marred a beautiful picture of the Resurrection Glory that could not be recaptured for that day. The glorious

picture of the Resurrection Glory eating or swallowing up mortality had been utterly destroyed. So Moses was angry!

Having clearly instructed Aaron, Eleazar, and Ithamar about God's Commandment to eat the wave breast and the heave shoulder of the goat offering, Moses turned his anger loose against Aaron's two sons, apparently assuming that they had originated the idea of burning the goat's body. Aaron, however, spoke in their defense.

**And Aaron said unto Moses, Behold, this day have they offered their sin offering and their burnt offering before the LORD; and such things have befallen me: and if I had eaten the sin offering to day, should it have been accepted in the sight of the LORD?**  
(Leviticus 10:19).

Aaron took the responsibility, releasing his two sons from the blame. He reminded Moses of all that had happened to him that day. In spite of the sudden destruction and death of Nadab and Abihu, he had been able to follow Moses' instruction and had continued his ministry as God's High Priest in the Tabernacle. He had not rent his garments in grief, nor wept, nor shown upon his countenance the grief of his heart. Israel was permitted to bewail and mourn; however, the Priests, because the Anointing Oil was upon them, were not to indulge in their personal grief. They were to carry on their ministry for the LORD.

Although Aaron's heart was broken with grief, he had fulfilled his ministry for the day, outwardly, at least; but neither Aaron nor his sons had eaten of the goat offering as their leader Moses had commanded them to do. They had burnt the body of the second goat on the Altar. After reminding Moses of God's Quality Principle, Aaron asked the question, "If I had eaten the sin offering to day, should it have been accepted in the sight of the LORD?"

Eating of the goat in the Holy Place was to depict the joyous Resurrection Glory swallowing up all disobedient Death, including all sorrow and heartache that go with it. Resurrection time is a time of *total joy*. Aaron was asking Moses, in so many words, "Which would have been better? Was it right for me to do the best I could do under the circumstances, which was to burn the sacrifice, or would it have been better for me to have eaten it in sorrow? Would the inner hurt and agony of my own heart have destroyed and marred the beautiful picture of Resurrection Joy? Which was worse? Which was better?"

When this was explained to Moses, he was content. "And when Moses heard that, he was content" (Leviticus 10:20). Moses immediately recognized God's Quality Principle. His Holy Anger was appeased as soon as he understood the whole matter. He, too, concluded that Aaron had done the best he could do under the circumstances.

Actually, Aaron was not obligated to explain himself to Moses, for he already had been consecrated to the ministry of High Priest and was capable of making a few decisions of his own. Yet, if Moses had been acting out of carnal anger, he would have tried to assert his authority of leadership over Aaron. After all, Aaron did not know as much as Moses did. Aaron had not been in the Personal Presence of God on the Mount as Moses had been. Moses' anger was righteous, moral anger because the moment the Moral Principle was established, even though it was on a lower realm, Moses' anger subsided.

The highest realm would have been for Aaron and his sons to have eaten the goat and fulfilled the picture of Resurrection Life swallowing up Death. Nevertheless, Moses was willing to settle for the best that could be done that particular day, even though he realized that another Moral Principle had been substituted. Moses was familiar with God's Nature Principle. He knew that God was Merciful and Kind and that He had accepted the best Aaron was able to do under the circumstances.

God Himself is governed by the same Principles which governed Moses. An example of God's Wrath being appeased through the application of the proper Principle is seen in connection with Hezekiah. The first thing Hezekiah did after he had become king was to purge, repair, and reopen the Temple which had been neglected during the idolatrous reign of his father Ahaz. Because there had not been sufficient time for people to prepare to eat the Passover in the first month, according to the Law, Hezekiah prayed, in so many words, saying, "Oh God, forgive us because we have not been able to do our best. There is not time properly to prepare the people, but this is the best we can do under the circumstances."

The people partook of the Passover in the second month, even though it was contrary to the God-given Law, because they related back to God's Nature Principle (II Chronicles 30:15-22). They recognized that He was Merciful and Long-suffering, and God honoured and respected this Principle by withholding His Wrath, which normally would have been poured out on those who had eaten unworthily of the Passover.

### **III. The Example of David's Justifiable Anger**

Another example of God's Holy Wrath being placated by His own Divine Principle is seen in David's life. David once got to eat of the Hallowed Bread of the Priest because he exercised his faith in God's Living Principle (I Samuel 21:1-6).

David was fleeing for his life, although he had done no wrong. He was being pursued by Saul, a man who had disobeyed God, a man who was full of jealousy, anger, wrath, and murder. Defenseless and hungry, David fled to the LORD's House where he persuaded the Priest to let him eat the Bread from the Table of Shewbread. David was fainting from hunger; he was a man who had been pushed into a desperate circumstance. He knew as well as the Priest that God had forbidden anyone to eat the Shewbread, other than those in the Priesthood. Nevertheless, he ate the Shewbread that day without being destroyed by God's Judgment because God's Nature Principle of Love and Mercy went into effect, along with God's Headship Principle, Power Principle, Quality Principle, and His Methods of Operation Principle.

This should be an encouragement to us. When we have done the best we can do in a circumstance, we should not grieve because we were unable to do better. Remember that God accepts our best under the circumstances. There is not one of us who could not do better if we could go back and redo some things.

The Devil takes advantage of human frailties and torments sincere Christians by saying, "Look what a mess you have made. You should have done it this way, or that way, or some other way. You should have done better." However, if we are acquainted with God's Quality Principle, we will realize that God will accept something that is just *better*, when it is the *best* we can do at the time. This was true when Aaron suffered great personal sorrow and loss. God accepted the lesser, which was the best Aaron could do under the circumstances.

In this chapter, we have seen a demonstration of righteous, justifiable anger, and we have seen the appeasement of that anger. Moses became angry because a Moral Principle was involved, but his anger quickly was pacified when he realized that Aaron was substituting God's Nature Principle in this particular instance. Aaron cast himself and his inability to be joyful on this occasion upon the Gracious, Understanding, Loving Nature of God, for he knew that God's own Living Principle would stand in the scales with him to make up for what he himself could not do because of his human frailties.

Surely, Eternity will swell with one grand opera, sung to celebrate the Works of the High and Holy One Who conceived and established a set of Perfect, Righteous Principles. And, melodies of praise will go up forever to glorify the Works of the Infinitely Humble One Who used these very Principles to redeem man who could not measure up to the exactness of God's Mark.

# Chapter Fifteen

## Converted Anger Becomes Prosperity

Ever since Adam-male and Adam-female wrapped their fig-leaf armour of anger about the inner loins of their human wills, mankind has had a Tree of Anger growing in his will. We all know what it is like to have the misused, abused energy of anger working in our life, but we all do not have to let our anger be pushed down into a frozen cesspool where it will work itself out in destructive ways.

God's children have another recourse in dealing with their anger. When Christians confess their anger and repent, that anger is carried away by the Blood of Jesus Christ and is cast into the Sea of Forgetfulness, behind God's Back, where it is changed into Righteous Energy again. This converted energy is returned to believers in the form of either white snow or white wool. The snow depicts the icy cold aspect of God's Nature — His Humble, Crucified Energy. The wool portrays the fiery hot side of God's Nature — His Exalted, Resurrected, Glorified Energy. Thus, believers now can tap a new reservoir of converted energy, giving them added virtue and power to live victorious Christian lives. With this new energy, believers have power to walk in high, exalted places in God's Will, as well as in low, humility places of personal crucifixion.

The Book of Genesis shows the great power of converted energy at work in the life of Jacob, a man who lived the Principle of converting his anger into cold and hot energy. He used the new energy to work great prosperity and blessing in his life and in the lives of others.

By way of background, let us look at the unusual experience Rebekah had as she carried a set of twins in her womb. Bewildered by the violent struggle within her being, she sought the LORD about the matter.

And the LORD said unto her, Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people shall be separated from thy bowels; and **the one people shall be stronger than the other people; and the elder shall serve the younger.** And when her days to be delivered were fulfilled, behold, there were twins in her womb. **And the first came out red, all over like an hairy garment; and they called his name Esau. And after that came his brother out, and his hand took hold on Esau's heel; and his name was called Jacob:** and Isaac was threescore years old when she bare them (Genesis 25:23-26).

A great injustice has been done against Jacob in making him a thief and a liar because he supposedly stole his brother's birthright. This was not the case at all. In fact, the very opposite is true, for it was Esau who stole the birthright from Jacob as they struggled within their mother's womb. Although Esau succeeded in being born first, Jacob continued struggling so that he still clutched his brother's heel as they were born. Because of this, his parents named him Jacob, which comes from the Hebrew root word meaning to seize by the heel, to restrain as if by holding the heel.

As Jacob grew up in the home, he was tutored and instructed by his mother Rebekah who had the revelation that the birthright belonged to Jacob. She knew that Jacob was to be the greater and that Esau, the elder, would serve his younger brother. Since the birthright legally was passed to the firstborn son, Esau was in line to be made king and priest and prophet of the family. However, because of his mother's teaching, the right to the birthright was kept alive in Jacob's heart, and he patiently waited for the opportunity to make it his again. Jacob also learned from his mother to depend on God for his life.

This was demonstrated when Jacob legally bought the birthright from Esau with a mess of pottage, a bowl of red beans. That pottage represented natural life. In giving the beans to Esau, Jacob was saying, "Here, you can have my natural life. Just give me my spiritual life with its inheritance. Jacob knew that if he gave the bowl of red beans away and received spiritual riches in return, he could trust in God for the sustenance of his natural life.

This same Principle was taught by Jesus when He said, "For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and *whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it.*" If we will seek spiritual life, first, seemingly at the loss of our natural life, we will find that natural life in the end. Our natural life is immortal until God is through with us, if we are busily engaged with what pertains to our spiritual life.

Jacob had learned to be dependent on God for his very life. It was no small thing to convince his father that he was Esau in order to receive the prophetic blessing of the birthright. Rebekah reassured Jacob that he need not fear. His reluctance indicated more than fear; it showed that he was not a lying, conniving, deceitful man by nature. It must be said to his credit that he respected his mother's judgment to the point of obeying her even in what appeared

to be a very risky arrangement.

And Rebekah heard when Isaac spake to Esau his son. And Esau went to the field to hunt for venison, and to bring it. And Rebekah spake unto Jacob her son, saying, Behold, I heard thy father speak unto Esau thy brother, saying, Bring me venison, and make me savoury meat, that I may eat, and bless thee before the LORD before my death. Now therefore, my son, obey my voice according to that which I command thee.... And Jacob said to Rebekah his mother, Behold, Esau my brother is a hairy man, and I am a smooth man: My father peradventure will feel me, and I shall seem to him as a deceiver; and I shall bring a curse upon me, and not a blessing. And his mother said unto him, Upon me be they curse, my son: only obey my voice, and go fetch me them (Genesis 27:5-8, 11-13).

On the surface, Rebekah's plan looked deceitful. It appeared to be a questionable and dishonest plot of trickery, but we must bear in mind the underlying factors in this case. Rebekah so loved the revelation of God's Will that she was willing to take full responsibility in the matter. She was willing to resort to extreme measures to assure the fulfillment of God's Revealed Will and Purpose. Had Isaac been as spiritually aware of and as concerned for the Will of God as his wife, he never would have proposed giving the birthright blessing to Esau.

Nevertheless, God used Rebekah and her wisdom in fulfilling His Will in Jacob's life. The younger son received the blessing that rightfully was his, which prophetically had been declared his while the twins still were in their mother's womb.

A further look below the surface of the matter reveals that Esau despised his birthright. He thought so little of it that he willingly sold his spiritual rights in exchange for a little passing physical satisfaction — a full stomach. The word *despise* means to disdain, disesteem, think to scorn, and to consider contemptible. God never intended for such a man to carry the birthright.

And Esau hated Jacob because of the blessing wherewith his father blessed him: and Esau said in his heart, The days of mourning for my father are at hand; then will I slay my brother Jacob. And these words of Esau her elder son were told to Rebekah: and she sent and called Jacob her younger son, and said unto him, Behold, thy brother Esau, as touching thee, doth comfort himself, *purposing* to kill thee. Now therefore, my son, obey my voice; and arise, flee thou to Laban my brother to Haran; And tarry with him a few days, until thy brother's fury turn away;... **And Isaac called Jacob, and blessed him, and charged him, and said unto him, Thou shalt not take a wife of the daughters of Canaan. Arise, go to Padanaram to the house of Bethuel thy mother's father; and take thee a wife from thence of the daughters of Laban thy mother's brother** (Genesis 27:41-44; 28:1,2).

For his part, Isaac evidenced no obvious resentment or malice once the confusion of the transaction had been clarified, for Isaac had to have known the revelation concerning the birthright. Although he had tried to bestow the blessing upon Esau because of his natural affection for the boy, in his heart he realized that God's Will had been done.

Even though the birthright and the accompanying blessing had been bestowed upon Jacob, Isaac also conferred a prophetic blessing upon Esau. Contained within that blessing was the reiteration of the fact that Esau was to serve his brother Jacob.

Jacob heeded his mother's words and left Canaan with his father's blessing upon him. He went to his Uncle Laban's house where he chose Laban's lovely daughter Rachel for his bride. After working seven years for Rachel, Jacob awakened the morning after the wedding to discover that the woman he had married was not Rachel, but her elder sister Leah.

We have to read between the lines in order to visualize a realistic picture of what transpired here. Jacob, being a normal man and very much in love with the beautiful Rachel, must have rushed over to Laban's tent in great anger and distress. He knew a terrible trick had been played on him. Instead of being joined to his beloved Rachel, he was married to the not-so-lovely Leah.

All Jacob could think of was getting his hands on Laban. What a dirty, deceitful trick to pull on him! He had worked faithfully for seven years for Rachel's hand, and it is certain that he would not have worked one day for Leah. How could Laban have done this thing to his own flesh and blood — his own sister's son? In his mind, Jacob must have said, "My God, what am I going to do? I have committed my life to Leah. I am married to her; I spent the night with her. I'm so angry I could kill somebody."

These would be normal reactions for any person in such horrible circumstances. The joyful, ecstatic anticipation of possessing Rachel as his own and taking his beloved bride home to Canaan's Land now lay shattered at his feet. His beautiful dream had become a horrible nightmare.

And Laban said, It must not be so done in our country, to give the younger before the firstborn. **Fulfil her week, and we will give thee this also for the service which thou shalt serve with me yet seven other years. And Jacob did so, and fulfilled her week: and he gave him Rachel his daughter to wife also.** And Laban gave to Rachel his daughter Bilhah his handmaid to be her maid. **And he went in also unto**

**Rachel, and he loved also Rachel more than Leah, and served with him yet seven other years** (Genesis 29:26-30)

Anger subsided to a degree as Laban and Jacob talked. We know that Jacob's anger did not continue to the degree of preventing him to work to obtain Rachel. After Jacob had fulfilled Leah's marriage week, he received Rachel as his wife; then, in accordance with his agreement with his uncle, he worked faithfully for Laban another seven years.

Such faithful labour is impossible if a heart is filled with anger and wrath. However, we know little about the struggles and agonies that Jacob's human heart and will must have endured those seven long years. How often he must have sought God's help and forgiveness over new anger that most surely must have welled up within him over and over again at the remembrance of his Uncle Laban's tricks. As he confessed and repented of his anger toward Laban, God forgave and cleansed him, and that sinful energy was cast behind God's Back into the Sea of Forgetfulness to be transformed into Righteous Energy. It was returned to Jacob as converted energy (wool and snow, hot and cold, exaltation and humility).

Laban was a most deceitful person. He did everything he could to take advantage of Jacob. During the twenty years that Jacob worked for him, Laban changed Jacob's wages ten times. Poor Jacob laboured seven years for each of his two wives, plus another six years to earn his own possessions. If it had not been that Jacob had learned well how to trust God and depend on Him for his natural life as well as for his spiritual life, he never would have put up with that kind of treatment for all those twenty years.

The story of Jacob is a good illustration of the Principle we are studying, here, which is that repented and confessed sin can be converted from sinful energy into Righteous Energy and returned to a person to bring him prosperity and blessing. This Principle worked with Jacob in his relationship with his uncle Laban. The greatness of the blessing indicates the greatness of Jacob's confessed sin as he dealt with his anger before God. Jacob managed to keep a right spirit in spite of the continuous outrages committed against him.

In order to get a vision of Laban's prosperity before Jacob started to work for him, we need to recall the fact that when Jacob first saw Rachel, she was tending and watering her father's sheep, a task normally committed to the sons of the family. This information is recorded in Genesis, chapter twenty-nine, which notes that all those gathered at the well, seeking to water their flocks, were men. Since Laban sent his daughter out to do a man's job, it is evident that he had not been blessed with a son, which in itself was quite a disgraceful thing in eastern society.

Laban was a poor man with no sons and only small flocks, which his daughter could attend, when Jacob joined his household. But, for Laban, the picture changed over the years after Jacob had joined his household. Sons were born to Laban; his flocks prospered, and Laban became a wealthy man — wealthy because of the blessings of aggressive, constructive energy that filled Jacob. Laban became rich because of Jacob's righteousness.

Jacob laboured fourteen years for Leah and Rachel, during which time he had many occasions to deal with his anger. This converted, Righteous Energy was returned to Jacob, and even though it was Jacob's righteousness, it overflowed and blessed those around him.

One day, however, God stopped blessing Laban through Jacob and caused the prosperity to settle where it primarily belonged, namely, to Jacob, for his enrichment.

And it came to pass, when Rachel had born Joseph, that Jacob said unto Laban, Send me away, that I may go unto mine own place, and to my country. Give me my wives and my children, for whom I have served thee, and let me go: for thou knowest my service which I have done thee. And Laban said unto him, I pray thee, if I have found favour in thine eyes, *tarry*: **for I have learned by experience that the LORD hath blessed me for thy sake.** And he [Laban] said, Appoint me thy wages, and I will give it. And he [Jacob] said unto him, Thou knowest how I have served thee, and how thy cattle was with me. **For it was little which thou hadst before I came, and it is now increased unto a multitude; and the LORD hath blessed thee since my coming: and now when shall I provide for mine own house also?** (Genesis 30:25-30).

At this point, Jacob had only his wives and his children. He possessed no personal property, for he had laboured fourteen years for Laban, all the while trusting God to supply his needs. Having fulfilled his obligation, Jacob felt that it was time to provide for his own house.

Both men acknowledged the prosperity and blessing that had been heaped upon Laban because of Jacob, and both men acknowledged the fact that the blessings had come from the LORD. Yet, in spite of the fact that he had been blessed in every way, Laban did not turn from worshipping idols. He evinced no interest in turning back to Jehovah God.

Laban was reluctant to give up Jacob, not for the spiritual blessing he could receive, but because of material gain he had received. God had blessed Laban through Jacob, hoping to bring him to repentance and back to Himself.

However, Laban was interested in using Jacob's righteousness only for his personal and selfish gain. He now had sons. He now had multitudes of goats, sheep, and cattle. Laban knew that Jacob had made him a wealthy man, and, for that reason, he did not want to let him go.

And he said, What shall I give thee? And Jacob said, **Thou shalt not give me any thing:** if thou wilt do this thing for me, I will again feed and keep thy flock (Genesis 30:31).

The phrase "Thou shalt not give me any thing" actually means "I will not let you give me a thing. I will take only what God gives me." All those years, Jacob had lived in dependence upon God for his very life, both spiritually and naturally. Having been deceitfully treated over and over again, Jacob could have taken this opportunity to grab for himself what he could have felt he rightfully had earned, but he did not. He still stood in dependence upon God. He wanted only that which God would give him.

Because he had learned well the lesson of dependence upon God, Jacob was now ready to reach out into the knowledge of good and evil that God had for him. This knowledge would bring good (prosperity) to Jacob and evil (pain) to Laban. Out of his knowledge of God, Jacob presented his uncle a plan that sounded foolish to the carnal mind.

I will pass through all thy flock to day, removing from thence **all the speckled and spotted cattle, and all the brown cattle among the sheep, and the spotted and speckled among the goats: and of such shall be my hire.** So shall my righteousness answer for me in time to come, when it shall come for my hire before thy face: every one that is not speckled and spotted among the goats, and brown among the sheep, that shall be counted stolen with me. And Laban said, Behold, I would it might be according to thy word (Genesis 30:32-34).

The plan gave Jacob only the mixed breeds, the weakest, the poorest of the lot. Working out of his knowledge of God, Jacob deliberately chose the poorest, the part that Laban did not care for. Jacob still was trusting in full dependence upon God for his life, his substance, and his prosperity. He knew his righteousness had worked great material gain for his uncle, but he also knew that now God was going to demonstrate how that righteousness was going to work for him. His prosperity would not be due to his uncle's doings; it would be because of God's Supernatural Workings on his behalf.

Jacob went one step further; he promised to care for Laban's flocks himself and leave his own pathetic flock to the care of Laban's sons. Had those sons been as reliable and competent as Jacob, Laban would have let Jacob go, and he would have turned the care of his possessions over to his sons. But, Laban knew it was Jacob's righteousness which had so richly blessed his possessions.

And he [Laban] removed that day the he goats that were ringstraked and spotted, and all the she goats that were speckled and spotted, and every one that had some white in it, and all the brown among the sheep, and gave them into the hand of his sons. And he set three days' journey betwixt himself and Jacob: and Jacob fed the rest of Laban's flocks (Genesis 30:35,36).

Jacob had managed to keep a right spirit through all those years, or God's blessing would not have been so apparent upon his life. The Bible would not have emphasized Jacob's righteousness if he had been eaten up with inward anger and hatred. Jacob had dealt with his normal and natural reactions, confessing and repenting of them before God; therefore, his corrupt energy had been transformed and converted into Holy, Righteous Energy. No doubt, those times of repentance had been frequent while Jacob worked for Laban.

We all have our own "Labans" in this life. So, let us learn a lesson from Jacob. If, through repentance and confession, we deal with our angry, resentful feelings (regardless of how justified and right we may feel in our reactions), they will return to us as converted righteousness which will work blessing and prosperity in our life. We can see how vitally important it is to keep a right spirit and a right attitude. A wrong spirit, like that of anger and hate, is aggressive energy which will work to our destruction and loss if it is not converted into righteousness through repentance and confession and the cleansing process of the Blood of Jesus Christ.

Laban separated Jacob's mangy flock from his own purebred stock, and he was quite satisfied with the arrangement. He had Jacob caring for his flock. He thought, "Surely, the LORD will continue blessing and prospering me now. Poor, foolish Jacob. His sickly, spotted, humble flock is over there in the care of my sons." But, Laban did not reckon with the power of converted, Righteous Energy.

God gave Wisdom Revelation, Understanding Redemption, and Satisfying Knowledge to Jacob as never before. Suddenly, Jacob was eating on the independence side; he was eating of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. He waited for God's time of redemption, and God did not fail him.

**And Jacob took him rods of green poplar, and of the hazel and chestnut tree; and pilled white strakes in them, and made the white appear which was in the rods.** And he set the rods which he had pilled before the flocks in the gutters in the watering troughs when the flocks came to drink, that they should conceive when they came to drink. **And the flocks conceived before the rods, and brought forth cattle ringstraked, speckled, and spotted** (Genesis 30:37-39).

In eastern countries, trenches or troughs were dug around the well and filled with water in order to provide space for more animals to drink at one time. It was at these watering troughs that Jacob piled up three particular trees: the poplar, the hazel, and the chestnut. These three trees were a witness of the three phases of God's Will, namely, His Redemptive Will, His Revelation Will, and His Satisfaction Will.

The living, green poplar tree represents fresh redemption. The Redemptive Will of Jesus Christ never is a dried-up rod of a long-ago experience. The rod was green and fresh, showing that we must experience a new redemption as we daily repent and confess our sins and transgressions unto the LORD.

The hazel tree (meaning almond tree in the Hebrew) pertains to the Revelation Will of the Son. In the ornamentation of the Golden Candlestick in the Holy Place,\* the almond bowl relates to Wisdom — Wisdom that comes only through God's Revelation.

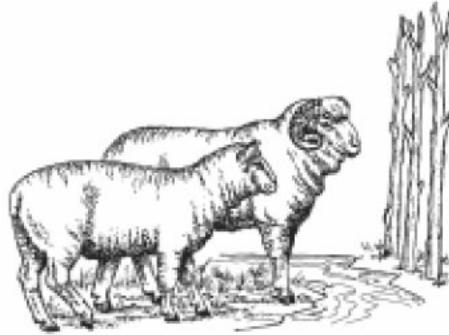
The chestnut tree represents the third phase of the Son's Will — His Will of Satisfaction. We first experience the Son's Redemptive Will; then His Revelation Will; and, finally, we enter into the Satisfying Knowledge of His Will.

With all three of these trees, Jacob peeled back the bark to expose the whiteness of their inner parts. In other words, there were two aspects of the miracle that transpired at the watering troughs. The outward part of the trees demonstrated God's visible Will; the inside part of the trees represented God's invisible Will which was present and working in this situation. There is no natural explanation for Laban's purebred animals bringing forth ringstraked, speckled, and spotted offspring. Clearly, it was the Supernatural Workings of the Will of God.

In these flocks, we also see a threefold witness of Jacob's righteousness. The miracle worked with Laban's sheep, with his goats, and with his cattle. When the flocks came to drink, they looked upon the visible rods (and behind them stood the invisible Will of the Son of God); then, moved by the Supernatural Anointing on the rods, the animals mated there at the watering troughs. Conception took place, and they produced a special breed of strong ringstraked, spotted, and speckled animals. These animals then were separated from Laban's flocks and counted among those of Jacob.

(See drawing on following page.)

**LABAN'S SHEEP  
LOOKED AT THE VISIBLE GREEN POPLARS THAT HAD INVISIBLE ANOINTING**

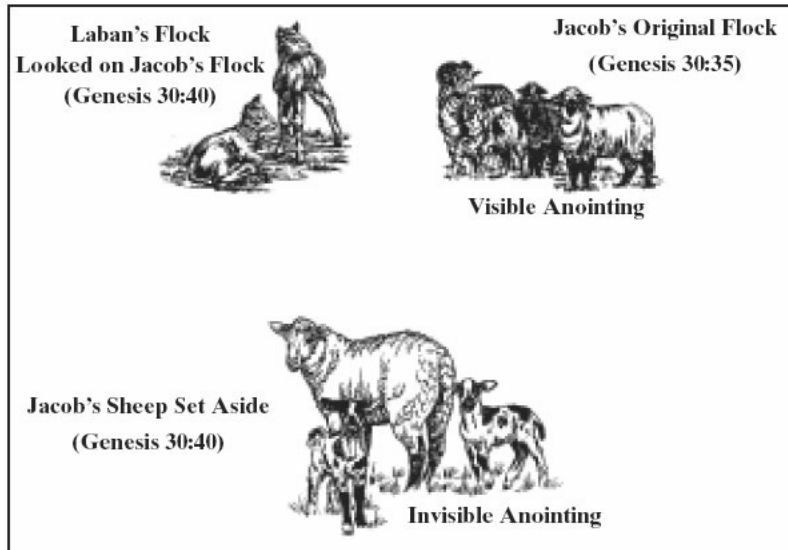


**JACOB'S SHEEP SET ASIDE  
(RINGSTRAKED, SPECKLED, SPOTTED, AND BROWN)**



And the flocks conceived before the rods, and brought forth cattle ringstraked, speckled, and spotted. And **Jacob did separate the lambs, and set the faces of the flocks toward the ringstraked, and all the brown in the flock of Laban;**and he put his own flocks by themselves, and put them not unto Laban's cattle (Genesis 30:39,40).

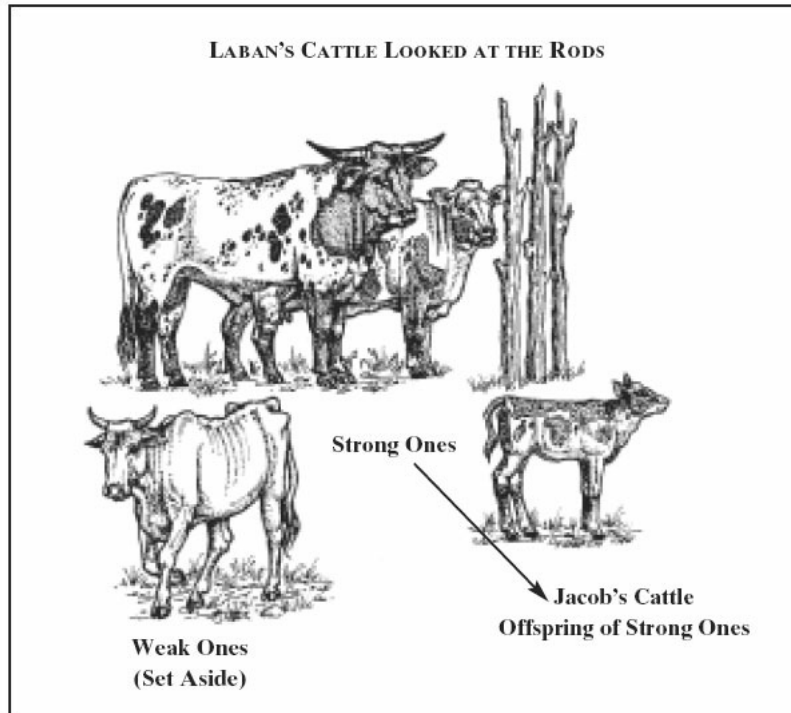
Jacob knew the Principle that we become what we look upon. That is why he took the little lambs of Laban's flock and set their faces toward the ringstraked, the speckled, the spotted, and the brown adult sheep. If the lambs would look upon the full-grown ones, they would, in time, become just like them. He knew if they looked upon the mature animals who had conceived before the rods, that it would be just as if they were looking at the rods. In time, the lambs would mature, conceive, and give birth to some more that would be like those they had looked upon.



This was the second miracle that showed the power of Righteous Energy. Righteous Energy will win in the long run. Laban was thinking that he was getting richer by the day, but because Jacob depended upon the Tree of Life (the Son of God), God gave him the knowledge of exactly how to put His Will into effect. God took the prosperity which had come to Laban because of Jacob's righteousness and gave it back to Jacob.

And it came to pass, **whenever the stronger cattle did conceive, that Jacob laid the rods before the eyes of the cattle in the gutters that they might conceive among the rods. But when the cattle were feeble, he put them not in: so the feebler were Laban's, and the stronger Jacob's** (Genesis 30:41,42).

Jacob took care of the sheep and the goats; then, he took care of the cattle. He began to watch the herds of Laban's cattle, noting the weak ones and those that were stronger. When the stronger white cattle conceived, Jacob laid the rods before their eyes so that they might conceive among the rods and, therefore, bring forth strong ringstraked, spotted cattle which would be added to his herd.



Through the Divine, Supernatural Workings of God, Jacob's prosperity flourished in a remarkable way. God gave Laban a threefold witness of Jacob's righteousness which was a result of having his sinful, aggressive energy converted by the Power of God. As great as Jacob's prosperity was, it was not unreasonable that he should have had an abundant reward to show for twenty years of service to his Uncle Laban. Certainly, Laban was not left poor either. He was far richer than before Jacob came. He still had his sons; and his sheep, goats, and cattle numbered more than his original flocks and herds.

God is Just and Fair in all His dealings with men. God simply balanced the scales when His Supernatural Power worked to give a portion of Laban's flocks to Jacob. He gave Jacob what rightly belonged to him after all his years of service.

And he heard the words of Laban's sons, saying, Jacob hath taken away all that was our father's; and of that which was our father's hath he gotten all this glory. And Jacob beheld the countenance of Laban, and, behold, it was not toward him as before. And the LORD said unto Jacob, Return unto the land of thy fathers, and to thy kindred; and I will be with thee (Genesis 31:1-3).

Jacob had lived up to his agreement with Laban to the fullest extent. God was the One Who had balanced the scales. Yet, when God Works, man frequently becomes angry. That was the case with Laban's sons. Although they knew the facts of the agreement, they tried to accuse Jacob and went so far as to attribute his prosperity to their father. The Truth of the matter was that it was their father who had kept Jacob poor for many years. It was God Who had worked supernaturally to make him rich with many possessions.

Jacob saw that Laban's countenance was not toward him as before. He also heard a Prophetic Word from the LORD, telling him to return to Canaan's Land. Then, he called his two wives, Rachel and Leah, to share with them the Word he had received from the LORD. Notice how frequently he recognized God's Power as being the Force which worked to bring prosperity to him.

...I see your father's countenance, that it is not toward me as before; but **the God of my father hath been with me.** And ye know that with all my power I have served your father. And your father hath deceived me, and changed my wages ten times; **but God suffered him not to hurt me.** If he said thus, The speckled shall be thy wages; then all the cattle bare speckled: and if he said thus, The ringstraked shall be thy hire; then bare all the cattle ringstraked. **Thus God hath taken away the cattle of your father, and given them to me** (Genesis 31:5-9).

God, Who is Just and Holy, balanced the scales between Laban and Jacob by taking Laban's cattle and giving them to Jacob. However, God never would have balanced the scales in that fashion if Jacob had failed to deal with his angry, resentful attitudes during those twenty years of service to Laban. The Bible's frequent mention of Jacob's

righteousness is a witness that he was faithful in converting his anger into the hot and cold energy of Holy Righteousness. It was the righteousness of Jacob's converted anger that God caused to become great prosperity, both spiritually and naturally.

---

\* B. R. Hicks, *Precious Gem In The Tabernacle* (Jeffersonville, Indiana: Christ Gospel Churches Int'l., Inc., 1961).

## Summary

This book has shown that Holy Anger originated in God's Will. The sinful abuse of man's God-given energy was introduced in the last three prehistoric creations of Heaven and Earth by the Angels known as Father Wicked, Mother Wickedness, and Abaddon.

Because Father Wicked and his followers sinned against the LORD's Name, God cast them into the *Shakhath* Pit at the end of the first creation. Then, in the second creation, Mother Wickedness also led the newly created inhabitants on the restored Earth to sin against the LORD's Holy Name; therefore, God cast them into the *Bore* Pit.

In the third creation, Abaddon led the newly created world of inhabitants, once again, into sinning against the LORD's Holy Name. So, God cast Abaddon and his followers into the *Tehhome* Pit or the Bottomless Pit.

In our present creation, sin originated with the Angel Lucifer who, in his Serpent-form, persuaded Adam-male and Adam-female to join him in his rebellion against God. Again, God judged sin, and the sinners were cast out of Paradise.

Adam-male's sin kept him from learning the Principle of Total Dependence on Jesus, the Tree of Life, and it kept him from rightly learning the Independent Principle at the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil. Instead of learning to exist independently from all other creatures, Adam-male and Adam-female used their stolen Knowledge to declare their independence from God, their Creator. Consequently, instead of finding their Life and Light in the Creator, our first parents found Death and Darkness in their independence.

When the extrasensory eyes of Adam-male and Adam-female's human wills became opened to darkness rather than Light, they saw themselves as little "father-gods," little "son-gods," and little "spirit-gods." Their little god syndrome kept them from being able to accept God's Reality Principle, which is a marriage union of pleasure and pain. Man's little god devised a plan for keeping pain out of his world, so he clothed his inner loins with the fig leaves of anger.

Abused, sinful energy, called anger, grows in the human heart and will in the form of a Tree, which has both visible and invisible aspects. A person ascends into *aboveground* anger on the steps of anger, indignation, rage, fury, and wrath, in that order. This class of anger is manifested *visibly* in one's language, actions, and reactions.

The same steps that lift a person into the heights of anger take him down into its depths. Cold, underground, frozen anger reaches down into the subconscious and unconscious parts of a person's being, passing through the moderate passive stage, the secondary passive stage, and on down into the frozen cesspool where it is totally separated from conscious thinking. Frozen anger expresses itself through frozen language, frozen actions, frozen anxiety, and frozen self-sabotage.

Examination of wrath, the deepest form of anger, shows that it enters into a joining with spiritual pride. The man who marries his soul to spiritual pride follows her into the ways of Death and Hell and is unable to find the path of Life. This is why it is so vitally important for us to deal with our anger in its beginning stages. It is a matter of Life and Death to us.

There are clear signs which show our spiritual maturity, while our need for more spiritual growth is also equally exposed. Our ability to accept, willingly, both pleasure and pain; our ability to be satisfied with the loss of old pleasure while seeking God's new pleasure; and our ability to wait patiently for pleasure to come are all indications of our increase of spiritual maturity. But, the absence of patience in any of these areas bears witness to our immaturity and should be enough to make us cry out for more of Jesus Christ.

It would be terrible if, after seeing our anger, God did not have Words of correction to show us how to deal with our misused, abused energy. But, praise God, studying His Word shows us that the proper way to handle anger is for us to acknowledge our condition; seek God's help; pray for understanding; and repent and confess our anger the moment it shows itself.

We must learn to discern between sinful, fleshly anger and the kind of anger God condones. Anger is justified when it is directed toward an offense against God's Moral Principles. The appeasement of justifiable anger comes through the application of the right spiritual Principle. Only God Himself, in the Form of one of His Living Principles, can balance the scales and make peace between God and sinful man, for man's best efforts fall far short of God's Perfection.

God uses converted energy, called righteousness, to bring spiritual and material prosperity to the person who is

faithful to repent of his anger, confess it, and get it converted from sinful energy back into the clean, Holy Form it had originally.

The Tree of Anger is, without doubt, strongly rooted in every human heart and will. However, there is no reason for us to become smitten with discouragement because of its presence. Jesus Christ, by the offering of His own precious Blood, has made a way whereby our corrupted Tree of Anger can be cut down, uprooted, and totally converted into a form of energy that will bless the Heart of God and bring pleasure and prosperity to our own life. Praise the Holy Name of the LORD! We have everything to gain by letting Jesus Christ convert our misused, abused energy (called sin) into Righteousness.

